

The Pied Pipers of Heaven

Who calls the tune?

by L.Kin

About Ghosts, Demons, Gods,
Angels, Shamans, Gurus,
Occultists, Magicians,
Cosmic Powers, Secret Lodges,
Scientologists, UFOs,
Extraterrestrials,
Galactic Confederations
and
Conspiracies against Planet Earth

EDITION SCIEN TERRA

Copyright © 1994 by L. Kin, All rights reserved

Title: The Pied Pipers of Heaven - Who calls the tune?

Copyright © 1994 by Edition ScienTerra, a subdivision of VAP Publishers, Wiesbaden, Germany All rights reserved. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles and reviews.

For information or book orders please address VAP Delivery Service, Post Box 1180, D-32352 Preussisch Oldendorf, Germany, Fax 49 1 57 42 1 93 04 55

ISBN 3-922367-28-3, Verkehrs-Nr. 16645 (BAG) First printing 1994 Printed in Germany

Table of Contents

| | |
|---|----|
| Preface | 5 |
| CHAPTER 1. Esoterics East and West | |
| 1.1 Spirits, Ghosts and Demons..... | 6 |
| GHOST ENCOUNTERS * DEMONS * MENTAL ENERGY AND IT'S SOURCE * EMOTIONS * THE MIND AND THE BRAIN * THE STATIC * ENLIGHTENMENT * THE STUFF THE MINDS MADE OF * THE REACTIVE BAINK * AUDITING * GAMES AND POSTULATES * PROBLEMS * IMPLANTS * MIND-SHARING * RESPONSIBILITY AND REINCARNATION * THE CLEAR | |
| 1.2 Soul and Body..... | 23 |
| THE BREATH OF LIFE * LIFE FORCE AND MEMORY STORAGE * CHILD DEVELOPMENT * PSYCHOSOMATICS * PRANA * CHAKRAS * CH'I * KAHUNA * DRUGS, HYPNOSIS, MEDICINE * EUROPEAN OCCULTISM * FRINGE MEDICINE * THE RESONANCE PRINCIPLE | |
| 1.3 Creating a Universe..... | 44 |
| AKASHA * ETHER POWER * FROM STATIC TO MEST * A DOWNWARD SPIRAL * UNDOING THE UNIVERSE | |
| 1.4 God and the Infinite..... | 51 |
| ATHEISM * MONOTHEISM * STATIC AND DYNAMIC * TWO BASIC RIGHTS | |
| CHAPTER 2. Scientology - Science or Science Fiction? | |
| 2.1 Auditing Compared to Traditional Practices..... | 57 |
| MEDITATION AND AUDITING * SHAMANISM AND DIANETICS * ON ENERGY TRANSFORMATION AND UN-CREATION | |
| 2.2 Hubbard's "Space Opera"..... | 61 |
| SCIENCE FICTION * SCIENTIFIC FUNDAMENTALS * SCIENCE VERSUS MYTHOLOGY * THE AXIOMS * THE ELECTROPSYCHOMETER (E-METER) * FACT OR FICTION? | |

CHAPTER 3. The Xenu Myth

3.1 A Global Catastrophe.....69

WARNING TO THE READER * A GALACTIC POWER COUP *
BATTLEFIELD EARTH * A PLACE OF EVIL * ON BTs AND
CLUSTERS *

3.2 Of Gods and Angels.....79

INCIDENT ONE * IMAGINARY UNIVERSES * A MAGICAL MULTI-
MEDIA SHOW * THE END OF SINGLENES * THE BEGINING OF
TIME * GAMES PREPARATIONS * TRAPPING ATTENTION * XENU
RECRUITS HIS TEAM * THE GAME TAKES OFF * A NETWORK TO
CONTROL ALL

3.3 Before Time Began.....86

THE AKASHA CHRONICLE * LUCIFER AND HIS DISCIPLES * AN
ENERGY PRESERVATION CONFERENCE * GAMES
ALTERNATIVES * TWO CONTESTANTS

CHAPTER 4. Earlier than Atlantis

4.1 Twelve who are Thirteen.....90

A THIRD CONTESTANT * GAMES NAMES * THE PHI PROJECT *
THE CONVERSION PROGRAM * TIMELESS CONCEPTS * YATRUS

4.2 The Binding of Spirit and Soul.....96

ONE PLUS ONE MAKES THREE * NEW TOYS FOR THETAN'S *
SURVIVAL WORRIES SEXUALITY * PARADISE LOST * CATCH
YOURSELF A THETAN * BODY SERVANTS

4.3 Setting Cosmic Law.....101

TWO RIVALS * OLD ABILITIES NEWLY IMPLANTED * HOW TO
IMPLANT CROSSED-OVER PURPOSES * A SECOND
SWITCHBOARD * COSMIC LAW * A LESSON IN BASIC
GEOMETRY

4.4 A New Culture.....106

YATRUS' BIO-LAB * SIGNS OF DECLINE * OUR ATLANTEAN'
HERITAGE

CHAPTER 5. The Fate of Earth

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----|
| 5.1 Earth since the Cataclysm..... | 109 |
|------------------------------------|-----|

A BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE WHOLE TRACK * EDUCATION BY IMPLANT * A LOBSTER-POT FOR THETAN'S * THE DEMON PLANET * MISSIONAIRES OF MANY SHADES * THE MARCABIAN CONFEDERACY * RE-CIVILIZATION PROJECTS * HIGH TECH FOR MR. CAVEMAN * A NET TO CATCH THEM ALL * THETANS ON A LEASH * THE MARCABIAN IMPACT * "R6 DECO"

| | |
|--------------------------------|-----|
| 5.2 Masterminding History..... | 126 |
|--------------------------------|-----|

WHOSE "ONE WORLD"? * XENU'S MONOLOGUE * ONE WORLD, ONE VOTE * A WHITE PLANET

| | |
|--|-----|
| 5.3 In the Hands of Extraterrestrials..... | 135 |
|--|-----|

YATRUSCAN DELIGHTS A PIGGYBACK SCENARIO * LIZARD MEN * UFO MANEUVERS

CHAPTER 6. Defense by Telepathy

| | |
|-----------------------------|-----|
| 6.1 The Magicians' War..... | 146 |
|-----------------------------|-----|

OCCULTISM WHITE AND BLACK * A FORMATION OF FORCES

| | |
|---------------------------|-----|
| 6.2 Hubbard's Attack..... | 152 |
|---------------------------|-----|

CLEARs IN TROUBLE * THE OT III BREAKTHROUGH * HUBBARD RECRUITS LOYAL OFFICERS * A BLUNTED ATTACK

| | |
|-----------------------------|-----|
| 6.3 The Battle Goes On..... | 157 |
|-----------------------------|-----|

A NEW CHURCH * EXCALIBUR * GALACTIC ADMINISTRATION 'XENU' IN SESSION * A NEW TYPE OF CLEAR * YATRUS GETS AUDITING * THE GE POOL * "GERD" * THE PHI MATRIX * DEPROGRAMMING THE SCREEN * THE "M-SHIP" IN ORBIT * FUTURE PROJECTS

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----|
| CHAPTER 7. The Future | 169 |
|------------------------------------|-----|

MARCAB CRUMBLING * A BODY CULTURE * “THE FRIENDLY
PLANET” * POLITICS “ SCIENCE AND ART * THE ATLANTIAN
LIABILITY

Epilogue.....177

APPENDIX

A. Glossary.....179

B. Reader’s Restimulation Remedy.....183

C. Excalibur.....187

D. Bibliography191

Preface

Various New Age techniques such as meditation have brought an awareness of man's position in the spiritual cosmos, "channeling" has opened communication lines with beings from other worlds, UFOlogists observe extra-terrestrial activities and warn the population of this planet of imminent dangers. Within this context, this book adds yet another facet. It's an attempt to communicate something I consider worthwhile, perhaps with the hope of contributing to desirable global changes. One might say that it concerns itself with a rather specific view of the world that of Ron Hubbard and his adherents. (Please note that neither author nor publisher are connected to the Church of Scientology or any of its organizations.)

Hubbard's view of the world might be boiled down to the simple statement that planet Earth is in the process of being conquered, colonized and practically enslaved by extraterrestrial powers since millennia. He is not the only one to say so. To arrive at this conclusion, the main theme of this book, we need to go through four preparatory chapters without which the findings and interpretations of chapter 5, "The Fate of Earth", would appear incomprehensible and nonsensical. We need to build a runway of sufficient length, as it were, in order to safely take off.

Chapter 1 deals with some fundamentals concerning the spirit, the soul, god and the universe; it incorporates classical as well as esoteric concepts on the subject of psychosomatic and compares them with each other. Chapter 2 deals with the question of scientific truth versus esoteric truth and gives some examples of the myths "natural science" indulges in without really admitting to it. Chapters 3 and 4 give an account of the history of this universe and center around the myth of Xenu, a mighty spirit Hubbard identified as controlling the fate of the world. In chapter 5 follows a general interpretation of the data accumulated so far, specifically with reference to the political and cultural position of Earth within this galaxy. Chapter 6, "Defense by Telepathy", shows what has been done and is being done for Earth to escape its fate. Chapter 7 is an attempt to predict some outlines of the future. The appendix contains a glossary of terms as well as notes on the procedures which have led to the findings and results described in chapters 3 to 6.

Acknowledgments: Although any book appears to be written by one author only, it is in fact the result of a stream of knowledge squeezed through that particular author and somehow ending up as ink on paper. My thanks go to all whose knowledge I could refer to and use in my own work; they go to my clients and assistants who in the attempt to shake off their psychic burden, found fairly unusual data, incidents and scenarios, and thus helped to write this account; they go to the teachers I had in this life, in particular to Ron Hubbard and Bill Robertson, and last not least to my earlier teachers of many lifetimes ago, spent in the foothills of the Himalayas, namely Sri Yuktesvar and the saint Babaji (as they are called today).

Notes: Quotations from Hubbard's work are printed in *italics*. Small figures like ⁶ at the end of sentences refer to titles listed in the bibliography. All technical terms specific to Scientology will appear in **bold** print when they are mentioned the first time; they are summarized in the appendix as a glossary for easy reference. Here and there in the text you'll find something like this: (Fac.12) or (Ax.45) or (Dn Ax.2). These are references to Scientology source materials such as the Factors (Fac), the Axioms (Ax) or the Dianetics Axioms (Dn Ax). The Factors, Axioms and Dianetics Axioms are philosophical structures Hubbard's teachings are derived from.

CHAPTER 1

Esoterics East and West

1.1 Spirits, Ghosts and Demons

GHOST ENCOUNTERS * DEMONS * MENTAL ENERGY AND ITS
SOURCE * EMOTIONS * THE MIND AND THE BRAIN * THE STATIC *
ENLIGHTENMENT * THE STUFF THE MIND IS MADE OF *
THE REACTIVE BANK * AUDITING * GAMES AND POSTULATES *
PROBLEMS * IMPLANTS * MIND-SHARING *
RESPONSIBILITY AND REINCARNATION * THE CLEAR

GHOST ENCOUNTERS

I met my first ghost as I was walking down a narrow country lane near East Grinstead, Sussex, England. It was close to Midnight. In the silence I suddenly heard the creaking of wheels and the clop-clop of hooves on the street, and all of a sudden there emerged, right next to me, so close I could have touched it, the silhouette of a stage coach. The coachman sat all huddled up in his cloak, as dark as the devil himself and gave me an evil glance. The apparition lasted about two minutes and then faded. I walked on. This was rather strong, particularly for a densely populated part of the country. One might expect that sort of thing in Scotland, but in Sussex? As I got home, I said to my wife: "Do you know what just happened to me?" And she said, without me being able to continue: "The stage coach? Did you see that, too?" It turned out that she had come across the same thing about an hour earlier.

Another one: one night I took a walk across the large green in front of the manor I used to live in; the moon was full, the wind rattled in the trees, the clouds raced across the sky, and I was enjoying myself no end. Suddenly I felt a pang of fear, like the blade of a knife was entering my chest. Immediately I spotted the direction it came from: out of a dark place where the trees grew thick and black. Behind it, about a hundred yards away, was a pond. I opened myself for the stream of pictures which I knew would be accompanying this powerful emotion, and there they were! The story of a young man, a gardener, who drowned himself one winter's night because of a lost love, about twenty years ago. As he saw his body floating down the pond and getting caught at the grid, an even greater loss overcame him and he hovered over his dead body in grief and non-comprehension and never got out of the incident. He stayed there, glued to the spot, for a good twenty years! He unloaded his misery to me, then decided to give it a new start, and left.

The next day I asked the landlady if something funny had ever happened at the lake, and she said oh yes, had I picked it up, too, there definitely was something foul down there, none of the children ever liked to go to the pond although it's the ideal

place in summer, and it probably started about twenty years ago when poor William F., the gardener, drowned himself in the pond etc., etc. (Next summer, by the way, the pond was crowded with children.)

I found that people, at least the English, have quite a good understanding of ghosts. Once, when I did some painting and decorating as a side job, I worked in a country manor and perceived a ghost of a woman who fled when she noticed that I had spotted her. I told the proprietor about my observation. She said: "No need to worry; she's a nice ghost, we know her quite well. Last century she actually owned the house. She just doesn't like people to sleep in the bedroom where she used to have it off with her lover. When we have guests we want to get rid of we put them in that bed and she'll come at night and knock it about." All very matter-of-fact.

Pregnant women are sometimes very aware of ghosts, meaning spirits in need of bodies. One lady told me that they came to her queuing up, applying for entry, and she wouldn't let them in until she found the right one. (Now, seven years later, I can only congratulate her on her choice.) Another lady told me that she became aware of a second spirit challenging the first spirit who had already claimed the embryo in her womb. She was sitting in her lounge one evening, when suddenly a tremendous tension built up in the room, with pictures moving on the wall and books falling off the shelf, until the two had fought it out between them. The lady herself had added to the charge as she was in favor of the existing proprietor and didn't like the intruder. So she helped fight the intruder, yet he won. Afterwards it took the lady a while to get used to him, and finally she welcomed him. They made a good team, as it turned out over the years.

A ghost is a spirit stuck in an incident and hanging about waiting to be redeemed by a kind soul. Just try your local graveyard! You'll find quite a number of spirits sitting on their graves bewailing their fate. Listen to them and they'll gratefully disappear. Some will ask you directions to the nearest maternity ward before they go. (No joke.) The process to achieve this is quite simple: just have a ghost tell his grievous story about a dozen times - and he will either dissolve or go off to start a new incarnation, depending if it's a demon or a real ghost.

DEMONS

A "real" ghost is an individual spirit like you and me except that he has no body. In that he can freely direct his attention and cause certain effects consciously and voluntarily, he is a creator, whereas a demon is only a created **entity**. White magicians trying to influence the weather or making the crop grow better are creating or using such entities by means of "evocations", and so do black magicians in order to subordinate others to their will or even kill them. In the magician's trade, demon entities are called "elementals".

Although a demon is not a free and unlimitedly causative spirit, he has an "ego" nevertheless, and he can act. You can freely talk and argue with demons. They will try to dominate you and attempt to deceive you about their true nature when they feel found

out. They may react like a real person in flesh and blood sitting across the table. This depends on the size and density of the entity and of the intention with which it is loaded. Some of them - like those used in voodoo and black magic - are positively killers!

In contrast to a spirit, an entity is only a ridge. A **ridge** is a mass of mental energy containing all data of the incident when it was formed, including the voice tracks of the people involved. Everybody makes ridges at times of high stress, loss or physical danger. Ridges bother one long after the actual incident is over; sometimes they appear as nagging **mental image pictures** which distract one or pull one into a daydream.

So ridges are made by oneself; with entities, however, it's somewhat more complicated. Although they are only ridges, they aren't made by oneself but by another person during some heavy incident. An entity is another person's ridge that wandered over to you. It gets from the other fellow's space into yours, and because you don't like it you push energy against it and wall it off- and that makes it *really* go solid. That solders it in for good. And then, one day or perhaps in the middle of the night, you find someone is talking to you from "over there"! Eerie feeling, takes getting used to. Very demonic.

Entities are usually perceived as "out there" whereas one's own pictures appear to be all around or perhaps in front of one. Since entities are made of another's mental stuff (with one's own added), they are a bit more resistive than "home-made" ridges. They reveal their contents in picture form like any other ridge would, but in order to dissolve them one has to actually recognize them for what they are and acknowledge them as "foreign-made". This makes some of them disappear in thin air - whereas others actually talk back! They contain voice circuits and are even able to give intelligent answers about the incident when they were created and in case of black magic, what purpose they were created for. You ask "When was it?" or "Who was there?", and the entity flashes the details you were asking for in picture form.

One has to be aware of the existence of entities when one does any kind of recall process or "reincarnation-therapy", because the impressions one gets may not stem from oneself but from an entity and therefore from the **time track** of another person. Getting time tracks mixed up can lead to severe complications in any form of therapy. A simple example of this is the fear usually associated with ghosts - maybe it's the ghost's fear, and we aren't used to distinguishing such things.

MENTAL ENERGY AND ITS SOURCE

We said that ridges and entities were made of mental energy. What is that? Where does it come from, how is it made? To help explain this, we need to introduce two terms: **theta** and **thetan**. "Theta" means thought, thought power, thought energy. The spirit who is doing the thinking, is correspondingly called "thetan". (The "th" in the Greek letter "theta" resembles the "th" in the English word "thought", therefore Hubbard chose to use the letter "theta" as a symbol for all things to do with thought.)

“Thetan” and “theta” are the heart of the matter; we must examine them closely. Every spiritual being is considered a thetan; you are a thetan, I am a thetan, pretty much everybody operating a human body is a thetan. It would be wrong to say: “have a thetan”, because “thetan” refers to the sprit *himself*, not to some part of him. Equally incorrect would it be to assume that any human being was a thetan and that “human being” and thetan was synonymous, since “thetan” refers to the spiritual aspect *only*, and as we shall see, a human being is powered and run by more forces than only one single thetan. We’ll come to that in the course of this chapter. For now it is sufficient to know that a thetan is an immortal spiritual being who produces and uses an energy called “theta’ in order to translate his thoughts into action.

Theta manifests itself in a twofold way: firstly as pure thought or pure concept in the form of postulates, secondly as “energized thought” in the form of “loud thinking” and mental image pictures. Mental image pictures, imaginations, hallucinations, fantasies, dreams, all consist of **mental mass and energy** existing in space and time. (This is usually abbreviated to **mental mest**.)

Some pictures have more mass than others, are denser, more solid, larger and longer-lasting than others. Depending on the amount of attention the thetan gives them this can go to the extreme of the picture being more solid and real than the actual matter, energy, space and time of the surrounding physical universe. At which point the person is considered psychotic. He sees things which nobody else sees; his personal reality is severely diverging from the shared reality of “normal” people (i.e. the majority), and so he is called insane.

This gives us an interesting insight in how reality is formed. “*Reality is the agreement upon perceptions and data in the physical universe.*” (Dn Ax.113) This sentence ought to be written in ten-foot high neon letters. The real world is only real to the extent that realities are shared. When one agrees with oneself only and disagrees with the majority, one is called insane. This can be easily observed. Just go to a party whose merriment is supported, improved and boosted by a selection of fine spirits, and stay sober yourself. Soon you’ll see realities slipping apart quite dramatically. And who, then, is to call whom insane, one wonders?

To repeat, theta appears in a twofold way - as pure thought (concepts, postulates) and as energized thought (pictures, intentions, will power). A demon entity, for example, is not a pure thought but a mass of theta energy once created by a thetan. A pure thought, in contrast, is invisible.

Both types of theta are created by the thetan. Theta is created by thetans.

And to the thetan, too, the two modes of manifestation apply. A ghost, for example, is a thetan in his energized form. He is a bodiless thetan giving out energy impulses which make him recognizable. His energy impulses are “coded” as emotions such as fear, terror or grief. When he is in the business of haunting houses, he is usually stuck in some incident of the past and has a compulsion to tell everybody about it, or at any rate people he sees as “sensitive” .

One usually perceives a person as a body superimposed by a pattern of emotional vibrations. Even without the body one can recognize the individual blend of energy vibrations typical for a certain person. If one didn't, one wouldn't know people from one's past life when one bumps into them in this life! Neither could one make repeated telepathic contact with others, be they on this planet or elsewhere, with body or without, because one wouldn't be able to tell if one were dealing with the same individual each time.

A thetan as "pure thought" on the other hand, a pure thought being without any energies attached, would be telepathically imperceptible. One might "know" him, yes, but not "see" him.

It follows that a thetan creates his own theta field to have a platform to act from. So although he actually exists outside the coordinates of time and space, energy and matter (mest), he is as well located inside them. Without such a field, he would exist outside mest only.

This bundle of mental energy is referred to by Hubbard as **mind**. In his function as a player of the game of life where he needs a body, food, playmates and things to play with, the thetan manifests himself - through his mind - on the level of mental mest and physical mest. The mind contains useful circuitry and data, for example all conscious memory, all learned skills, all automaticities such as walking, writing or driving. The mind is the thetan's briefcase, or perhaps his "electronic notebook".

In that the thetan continuously creates this energy field called mind and in that he carelessly tends to identify with it, one could rightfully say that the thetan *is* his mind. Thetans - you, me, anyone - exist as game-players to the extent that they make themselves perceptible by a mental field and act through one.

EMOTIONS

The mind, being an energy phenomenon, always is in some state of vibration. It cannot hold still; it pulses. The vibrations emanating from it are felt as **emotions**. ("Emotion", Latin, means "a motion emanating".) Emotions have frequency and amplitude. The lower the frequency, the lower is the emotion; the lower the amplitude, the weaker is their volume of expression. It's a total parallel to guitar strings - the tauter they are, the higher their pitch; the wider they swing back and forth (because they were plucked hard), the louder they sound.

Emotions are the thetan's mode of pulsing into his body and environment and of responding to it. "*The intention to exert effort bridges (from the thetan) into the body by emotion. In other words, the physical-mental bridge is emotion.*" One can't get the body moving by thought alone; one must additionally produce mental force (emotion) on the basis of that thought in order to achieve physical activity (motion).

Attitudes are a pattern of postulates and counter-postulates accumulated over many lifetimes. Some of them are habitually energized, that is, with attention put on them which keeps them activated, and this is what makes each thetan have a certain “character”. He pulses according to his postulate/counter postulate sets (Ax. 2, 3). In the course of time he may become narrowed down to a fixated pattern of emotional frequency and so to a narrow band of sending and receiving. “*Emotion is the energy manifestation of affinity. (. . .) Emotion could be called the index of a state of being.*”

A thetan who is not flexible on the emotional tone scale but stuck on a certain band, will only respond to a range of half a tone above and half a tone below where he stands and simply not perceive what’s further above and below. Seen this way, emotions are not simply passing moods but basic and fairly persistent attitudes towards life. They function as filters for one’s perceptions (inflow) and actions (outflow). Man sees his environment through these filters; he literally creates the world in his own image! An angry man sees the world through this particular emotion and acts accordingly, so does the fearful one, the apathetic one, and as well the cheerful and enthusiastic ones.

As *all* actions are preceded by thought and accompanied by emotions, it follows that “emotion” and “irrationality” are not synonymous. One surely wouldn’t call a habitually joyful person making sane decisions “irrational”, just because those decisions were based on a joyful emotion; but one would rightfully use that term for a habitually angry person making insane decisions because of the anger involved. Only a low emotion can blind the conscious mind, the “ratio”, and is therefore correctly to be called “irrational”.

On the basis of this model, the interaction between thetans can be seen to occur purely by resonance. The vibrations of one thetan may touch a “sympathetic string” in the other- and behold! there is communication. Or not. It depends on the chronic tone level of the receiving thetan. If the two don’t harmonize, their communication won’t last long - they may not even perceive each other! “Resonance” is therefore but another word for “affinity”.

To go back to ridges and entities for a moment - *their* interaction with a thetan works on the same basis, naturally. As ridges and entities are small sub-fields within the general field of a thetan, living a life of their own because the “the boss” has walled them off to keep their unpleasant contents away from him, and as they can’t help vibrating, they of course influence and modify the quality of the general field and thus affect the thetan. He responds to the vibrations of other thetans, his own ridges and foreign entities in the same way a radio responds to a radio station. To the extent that he doesn’t recognize this, the thetan doesn’t consciously respond but unconsciously *react* to these influences, and accordingly this walled-off part of the mind is called **reactive mind**. The reactive mind is shut off from his awareness but still affects him. Usually one only notices how one is being affected - in the form of unwanted emotions and body pains - but doesn’t see the source of it. (In the Sanskrit terminology of ancient India the reactive mind would compare to the concept of “samskara” which literally means “lasting impression”. The “lasting impressions” of many lifetimes - as long as one is

unaware of them - are the driving force generating one's present karma and all the mishaps connected with it.)

THE MIND AND THE BRAIN

A clear distinction ought to be made between the mind and the brain. The brain is a lump of tissue, it doesn't think nor does it contain pictures. The mind, in contrast, is a theta energy phenomenon produced by the thetan to operate within the world of mental and physical matter, energy, space and time. It is a communication relay point for that level of game.

Here is a test: close your eyes and imagine a cat. Now get a brain surgeon to open your skull and find the picture of that cat in your brain. He won't find it. Because it isn't in your *brain* but in your *mind*. And who looked at it is you. This simple demonstration clarifies the difference between thetan, mind and body.

This stands in obvious contrast to some schools of psychology, psychiatry and medicine where it is held as truth that man is a lump of meat, his development based on a set of genes, his psyche governed by cerebral, neural and endocrine circuits, and his existence limited to the time span between his leaving the womb to the instant the EEG stops registering on his brain. This creature is known by the name of Homo Sapiens, "the wise man". Certainly the brain has its value in that it functions as "*a very mechanical rattletrap sort of a switchboard*", as Hubbard disrespectfully calls it, and certainly, when you stimulate or surgically remove certain parts of the brain, certain parts of the mind and its capacity "*to translate thought into action and to coordinate energy*" becomes affected, but nevertheless, the mind is not the brain! Anything that could be said about the function of the right and left brain lobes refers to the structure of the switchboard, not to the mind.

It is of paramount importance to observe the difference between structure and function. A switchboard operator may function well, but with a damaged switchboard she doesn't stand a chance. No structure there to work with. It would be utterly incorrect to put the intelligence of the switchboard operator (function) in question just because the switchboard (structure) is out of order; likewise, even a structurally intact switchboard is worthless in the hands of a dull switchboard operator who doesn't function well.

The connection between thetan, mind and brain is (once again) based on resonance. A thetan gets his brain working by pulsing towards it; in other words, it's the mental vibrations of the mind sealing the neural activity of the brain off. Scientific experiments demonstrating that the brain as a whole responds to gigahertz frequencies actually confirm this. Psychiatric patients in Russia who were treated with microwaves showed significant improvements in their behavior. No drugs were given, no psychotherapy. Microwaves were beamed at the brain; that was all. The brain is an antenna.

This is not to underrate the brain's complexity and subtlety. It continually receives and decodes data from the body's sense organs and as well integrates and amplifies the energy vibrations generated by the thetan into the appropriate motor channels with phenomenal speed and coordination. One would be completely wrong to suppose all is known about it yet, but nonetheless the principle remains that it is a tool.

THE STATIC

Above the level of mental mest, of mind-to-mind telepathy, a thetan is manifested as postulates. On this level of existence he is invisible and infinite. "Infinite" means: no boundaries, no limits. A thought, a postulate, does not exist within space and time, it does not show up as mass or energy. It is infinite. Through their postulates all thetans "overlap" as infinities, or perhaps "in" infinity. This infinity aspect of a thetan is referred to as **static**.

The game of life, of individuality and ego, can only be kept up by a pretense called "not-knowing" or "un-knowing". One cannot play a game when one can predict (know) everything everybody else will do. One has to agree to be not-knowing in order to experience surprise. Not-knowing, then, is a determined action, an act of will - but it may turn into a habit! That's where it becomes dangerous. Once one pretended not to know so that one would have a game, and by and by it became a habit.

It's like playing hide and seek with little children. You pretend not to know where they are, you pretend to seek them, you pretend to be surprised on having "found" them. They in turn often only pretend to hide. It's make-believe on both sides, to have a game. Now imagine the pretense became a serious conviction - that you *really* didn't know where the child was and didn't see it although it's right behind the arm chair. It would turn the initially lighthearted game into a rather dramatic search of all closets and cabinets in the whole house accompanied by anger, fear, effort, frustration, despair.

The more not-knowing becomes a habit, the more one sees oneself as "down here", as trapped in the universe of matter, energy, space and time. And *then* one forgets that one is actually "up there" as well, that one is pure thought and, further up even, the source of thought - static.

Hubbard defines the thetan as an **awareness of awareness unit** and as well as an "*energy-space production unit*"¹. So he creates his thoughts, emotions and his mental space, and he is aware of that. As well he is aware of the thoughts, emotions and perceptions streaming in on him from the environment and of his responses to that. He is "aware of being aware". If one could have and hold this position of awareness one would remain just as unaffected by thoughts and emotions as a mountain top is unaffected by rain clouds. This state of being the cause of motion without moving oneself is the essence of static-ness.

Static is unfortunately not an "automatic" state but one situated on a sliding scale from full awareness down to non-awareness. The thetan may through negligence forfeit his birthright of being fully aware of himself as a static and a source. The desire to reverse this draws people towards religious and mystical practices. They want to break through this self-erected barrier of un-knowingness, join their bottom-half with their top-half and be one with themselves.

ENLIGHTENMENT

Breaking the barrier of un-knowingness is called “samadhi” or “satori” in the East; usually this is translated with “enlightenment”. A better translation would be “an awakening”, because one doesn’t “see a light”, rather one wakes up to “bodhi”, to one’s true spiritual nature. Seeing a light means that one has become aware of some sort of energy phenomenon, yet bodhi, one’s true nature as a static, is beyond that. So instead of seeing something at one’s awakening one rather realizes and knows that there is nothing to be seen, heard or experienced. It’s like one had been looking out of the window all the time, enjoying the view, and one day one discovered that the window was only painted on the wall, the wall itself not thicker than the actual wall paper - and that behind it there is emptiness.

“Bodhi” translated into Hubbard’s terminology, would go along with the ability to “have” everything as well as nothing without ducking, evading, attacking, ignoring or any other mechanism. One would take it as it comes without losing one’s good humor and serenity. This ability is termed **havingness**. When Jesus Christ suggests to turn the other cheek he isn’t actually asking for a demonstration of meekness but of havingness. “Give me another blow! I can have it. I’m stronger than you.”

“Having total nothingness” would mean tolerating the absence of absolutely everything. This is incredibly difficult, because the concept of “being someone”, of ego, is already a somethingness and ultimately one would have to let go of that, too! But . . . but . . . but then one would be nothing . . . How awful! Yet a Zen master would say: Great! Who needs an ego anyway? Throw it away!”

The ego, real as it may be on one level of existence, creates the illusion of duality and bars the way to a higher level of existence beyond duality. The level of non-duality where “one-ness” and “nothingness” merge, is termed “nirvana” in Buddhism. An awareness of nirvana whilst simultaneously being “down here” on the playing field of the world without falling into the trap of the mest-universe - that’s the true test of enlightenment.

Through the specifically scientological self-realization technique called auditing - to explain its purpose in this particular context - a gradual spiritual awakening occurs. Session by session one recognizes “I’m not that”. All the incidents, pictures and masses which formerly one identified with, one eventually sees as “not me”. On a finer level of perception one becomes aware of negative postulates, knows “I’m not that” and cancels them.

“In the pursuit of Tao, every day something is dropped”, as the Tao-te-ching, a Chinese book of wisdom, has it. Lao-tsu, its author, says this about the nature of the Tao: “It is beyond form. It is beyond sound. It is intangible. It returns to nothingness. The form of the formless, the image of the imageless, it is called indefinable and beyond imagination.”

The search for “enlightenment” is often viewed as an escape from all things unpleasant and cumbersome. Rather the aim is a full *integration*, a wholeness where life can be fully understood and experienced with total joy.

THE STUFF THE MIND IS MADE OF

Now what does mental mest actually consist of? So far it was simply stated that it's there - in form of willpower and emotion and I hope that the reader, on the basis of his own observations, can agree. But how does it come to be? According to Hubbard, mental energy consists of **attention units**. As he uses a number of names for this phenomenon to distinguish between specific functions, I personally prefer to call them by the catch-all name “theta particles” or “theta quanta”. They are very fine vibrating quantities of mental energy comparable to the subatomic quanta observed in physics, said to be the most subtle particles in the physical universe, way below the level of atoms.

Hubbard notes that “*electronics are lower and cruder manifestations of the same order of actuality as thought,*” and that “*the laws of the theta universe parallel electromagneticgravitic laws*”. And just as physicists prove the existence of sub-atomic quanta by means of their linear accelerators, mental particles or theta quanta can be shown to exist with an “E-meter”, Hubbard's ill-reputed, media-decried but nevertheless widely copied and used electropsychometer. (The E-meter is a mental energy detection device often used in auditing. Its exact functions are described in chapter 2.)

Whatever one puts attention on is energized by the theta quanta flow one's attention essentially consists of. The energy vanishes as soon as one has recognized that one did put it in a certain place, particularly after one has found the decision (a postulate) that preceded the action.

You could make a person put attention on an object, or ask him to hold his attention concentratedly in mid-air, and you would see a corresponding reaction on the E-meter. This can be shown to work even on single theta particles, no matter at what distance. The thetan is able to detect his particles wherever they may be. After all it's him who created them; they are his own “flesh and blood” as it were, they contain an imprint of his postulates and emotions at the time they were made. and he will invariably find them and unmake them if that's what he wishes. Physical space is no obstacle to this, because one is dealing with *mental* space which isn't measured in kilometers but in terms of affinity or lack thereof.

Some people manage to detect their “parked” theta particles millions of light-years away in some remote part of this galaxy or another. They were drawn to them in the effort of undoing an unwanted attitude, emotion, sensation or pain. The meter reads acting like a Geiger counter, showed the way; the incident causing the attention to congeal there was found out about - and the unpleasant phenomena disappeared.

Habitually one puts bits or perhaps lumps of attention units on things, people or other aspects of life. These attention units connect one into the world and stabilize one

like a ship well moored by her anchor chains. For this reason, Hubbard occasionally calls them **anchor points**. They create the mental space of a thetan.

Usually one doesn't think much about one's anchor points, one takes them for granted. One's marriage partner, the children, the car, the job, the fact that winter follows summer and night follows day; all this is taken for granted. One mainly notices anchor points at the moment of abrupt change or loss. A sudden car crash, the death of a family member - this destabilizes life and makes one's space collapse; one feels "caved in" and drops on the scale of emotions to a low point.

Yet only a certain amount of one's attention is fixated this way. Beyond that one has a potentially unlimited capacity for producing more and more theta quanta to freely put them on things, people, emotions, mental image pictures and thoughts. Whatever one puts attention on becomes highly energized, as we saw, and it becomes important - be it positively or negatively. For example, when one feels sad and puts a lot of attention on it, one feels even sadder. Had one put one's attention on something cheerful instead, the sadness would have diminished. Likewise, putting attention on one's positive games postulates puts one into a state of exhilaration, whereas energizing ones negative counter-postulates makes one feel listless, massy and depressed. As a thetan one can channel one's theta energy, one's attention, either towards problems or towards solutions, and life will run accordingly (Ax. 49).

THE REACTIVE BANK

Now that it is understood that mental energy consists of theta quanta, we can have a better look at what a ridge really is. It consists of tightly packed-up theta particles, created in the attempt to keep the unpleasant and painful events of life away. They serve as a cushion or a shock absorber. As one tries to hold such an event off whilst it's happening or ban it from one's mind once it's over, one works against it with one's theta energy. In other words, forcefully trying to not-have something as it is, creates a ridge.

Havingness means going with the flow, bending in the wind like a reed, rolling along with the wave. No damage. It may even mean dissolving the incoming flow by sheer love. Non-havingness means opposition, and leads to ridges.

A ridge contains all the information pertaining to its formative situation - one's emotions, one's postulates, and those of any other person involved in the incident, too. It contains action, emotion and thought. A ridge is like a real-life video cassette. When it gets **restimulated** by outside influences, it reels off its contents and is **dramatized** by the person. He will reactively and unknowingly replay parts of the "video film" contained in the ridge, on the level of action, emotion, thought or all three of them. In most cases this may not look terribly insane, yet it does show in the lack of positive results and optimum solutions.

A rather simplistic example: a man gets bitten by a dog; his leg bleeds. That's the incident as such. Later, whenever he sees a dog (restimulation), he feels ill at ease and may even get unpleasant sensations in his leg (dramatization). The point is - he gets this *even though* he knows that he got bitten and that he felt alright about dogs before. So there is something unknown in the incident which has the power to trigger misemotions and physical sensations in the presence of a restimulator (in this case the dog). If the person were fully conscious of all aspects of the incident, he couldn't get restimulated by anything.

The restimulation mechanism, to be exact, is not set in motion by the outside influence itself but by the thetan's own games postulates or counter-postulates. This is evidenced by the fact that sometimes one can tolerate (have) a certain outside influence without feeling restimulated at all, whereas at other times a full-blown restimulation may set in. Let's take a more sophisticated example. Supposing there was a lady (let's call her Mary) who had trouble going on motor ways in her car, because she quite often felt like her chest was all tight and she couldn't breathe. She says to her friend: "Look, John, sorry I can't come along for a ride, but it's killing me". "It's killing me" is the counter-postulate. Mary pronounces it without being aware of it. But, and that's the point, it doesn't *always* enter her mind! When she is in a fine mood, she finds herself enjoying the car ride. No attention on the counter-postulate 'It's killing me' at all!

However, when she is depressed for some reason, she finds her symptoms turning on - because in a low emotional condition, black thoughts are likely to cross anyone's mind, even though they may have been caused by something entirely different. The fact that she puts attention on a particular black thought ("It's killing me!") energizes it and so creates the mass which presses down on her body and results in "her symptoms".

If you gave Mary some cocaine or opium, she might get so high on it that she wouldn't panic in cars no matter how fast they went. Or, if she went to the pharmacy and got a depressant, she would be too dulled to have any emotion at all, not even panic. Why does she have this tightness in her chest? Here is the background story (which she doesn't know): she had a car crash in her last life. When the car started skidding on the rainy motor way, she thought: "It's killing me!", and it did. She died because the steering column went through her chest. From that stems a counter-postulate ("It's killing me!") and a psychosomatic pain (in her chest).

The data are stored in Mary's mental data banks now. But not only stored - they are locked away and hidden from view behind impenetrable walls of mental energy, piled up at the time of the accident by Mary's wish never to look at it again. Too terrible.

Still, in a low emotional condition Mary will react to stimuli in the environment that resemble those of the original incident. She won't become aware of the accident as such; she will only dramatize it. Because of this involuntary, unwanted but yet compulsive reaction to events of the past, Hubbard calls the banks where such data are

stored, the **reactive bank or reactive mind**. (We already had a brief glance at it a few pages earlier.)

Restimulation of the reactive bank is not “fully automatic”. We saw that Mary’s chest pains turn on not everytime she drives on a rainy street, not everytime she sits in a skidding car, not everytime she races down a motor way, no - it turns on when the thought “It’s killing me!” crosses her mind. Only then. It is this thought that she doesn’t want to have, she pushes against it with all her mental energy - and thereby *re-creates* the ridge which was formed at the time of the original incident. Thought precedes energy production and action.

The restimulation mechanism therefore is not to be compared to the environment landing a direct hit in the bank like the ball of a pinball-machine hitting the heads and the display panel going wild. This would pre-suppose that the bank had an existence of its own - which it doesn’t. Certainly, some portions of the bank are in chronic restimulation, so the bank does exist - but only because it is *made to exist* by the thetan creating counter-postulates on the basis of negative emotions to start with, and then keeping both the postulates and the emotions going indefinitely. Postulates are senior to mest. The thetan creates mental mest on the basis of postulates. It’s not the outside world creating mental masses around the thetan, rather it is the thetan himself doing it as soon as he remembers his counter-postulates in context with a particular situation.

Of course, for the thetan outside mest there is only “time-lessness” or “eternity”. So he is creating for himself particles and ridges with an apparent sense of time, space and content and as well a justification for believing all this about them.

AUDITING

Un-creating such a counter-postulate usually requires finding the incident when it was made (the **basic**) and running through it many times until its sequence of events is fully known and all negative emotions (**charge**) are drained off it. This may take many hours and the dramatization of the incident’s contents may be very demanding on the auditee. But as soon as all charge is gone, the postulate will come to view and the auditee will have a life-changing **cognition**.

After such an end phenomenon, the psychosomatic complaints of the auditee will have disappeared. The same goes for demons and other entities - as soon as the postulates keeping *them* created, are found, they will dissolve into thin air. This implies that places that used to be haunted won’t be haunted any more. The only reason for the entity to be kept in that place was a postulate kept unknowingly alive and energized by its “owner”. Whether one audits the owner or the entity doesn’t make a difference - in either case the entity will be gone and its owner will feel correspondingly relieved (even though he may not realize that someone was auditing the entity created by him.)

The two energy fields of the thetan on the one hand and his entities on the other might be compared to a bowl containing a mixture of salt and sugar. The bowl in this example would correspond to the mind, the grains of salt and sugar to different types of

theta quanta. Auditing is the attempt to separate the grains by looking at each one, determining its correct classification (home-made or foreign-made) and finding out who put them there in the first place (Ax.29). "*Sanity*". says Hubbard, "*consists of the ability to recognize differences, similarities and identities*".

Usually auditing is done between two people, the auditor and the **auditee**. The auditee, in Scientology jargon, is generally called pre-clear or pc. This term presupposes that there were a definite point of mental clearedness (**Clear**) after which no further auditing occurs, which definitely is not the case. People do get audited after Clear, simply because there are no limits to one's expansion. "Clear" therefore is a gradually evolving phenomenon. Most commonly people carry on with their mental cleansing process as "solo-auditors", that is, they use auditing techniques and an E-meter to approach their bank directly and without the help of an auditor. Yet there are points when the solo-auditor's havingness isn't sufficient to look at certain incidents - in which case he will seek the assistance of an auditor and for that span of time become an auditee again. So "auditee" seems to be a more convenient term than "pre-clear" since one is always this side of the hypothetical state of "absolute Clear".

An advanced solo-auditor will have no problem entering another person's reactive data banks telepathically and assisting him in cleaning them up. This is limited by the auditee's ability and willingness to cooperate. To give an example: BS, a capable solo-auditor (name abbreviated), decided to help his cousin, Cathy (name altered), a lady in her fifties who had suffered severe depressions and wound up in a psychiatric clinic where she was given plenty of pharma-drugs. Cathy had already spent two years in the clinic and was in a state of apathy. The clinic was 600 kilometers from the place where BS lives. They had the occasional phone contact, but BS found he couldn't do anything for her just talking to her. So he went in session, put himself in the position of Cathy's viewpoint, telepathically looked at her bank "from the inside", became aware of a number of ridges, entities and postulates and cleaned up what he had found. The session took about 90 minutes and happened to end at exactly 4 pm. At about 7 pm Cathy rang him and told him that at about 4 pm, for the first time in many months, she had felt self-confident enough to leave the clinic and take a stroll through town. She really had enjoyed herself. BS carried on with this telepathic assist and Cathy made good progress, but eventually they couldn't win against the overpowering influence of the drugs Cathy was being given. A change of environment and treatment would have been needed which in Cathy's case was not possible to arrange.

GAMES AND POSTULATES

Any activity containing a goal and the intention to reach it despite all obstacles, is (in Scientology parlance) considered a **game**. It consists of goals, freedoms and barriers.

The game as such isn't that important, it could be anything; winning it, however, *is* important.

A game's intention - for example "I know I'll pass my exams!" - is expressed as a **postulate** containing the element of unshakable certainty. A postulate is a type of thought occurring without any mental pictures. It is a pure concept. One carries it about and draws one's decisions, imaginations and evaluations from it. Mental image pictures are created on the basis of such pure concepts or postulates.

Usually one is so fully identified with one's postulates and concepts that one doesn't even know that one is running on them. For example, there is a whole range of concepts (or basic attitudes, as one might say as well) connected with existing as man or woman in the Christian parts of Europe. A wholly different set of concepts is maintained in Islamic North Africa and again in Black Africa (and so on). These concepts are so deeply ingrained in the culture and its people that individual men and women would have a hard time answering a question like: "To play the game of being a man (or a woman), what game postulates do you adhere to?" This would require that they step back from a cultural habit they adapted to during their whole life and most likely through a series of past lives, too.

A postulate, therefore, is something one takes for granted even without being aware of it. It is a personal truth. Life is shaped and formed by postulated personal truths. Man is as he considers himself to be (Ax. 2, 3, 14). Now someone might say: "But I'm ill and unhappy and I can't say that I *wanted* that particularly!" Very well - but what postulate is he running on that makes him persist in illness and unhappiness? "I don't know. . .", he says. There is something the person wants to know but doesn't know. He is involved in a game but isn't conscious of it. Perhaps he ought to focus his attention with the help of a spiritual guide.

PROBLEMS

Apparently there are two kinds of postulates: game postulates and counter-postulates. Game postulates, when acted upon, give you what you want, counter-postulates keep you from it. Where and when were they formed? During a time of overwhelm when things went out of control and one was about to lose one's game. Before, one thought: "I can do it!" That's a game postulate; it's the first of the two, the start of something. It's powerful because it's made by the thetan outside the rest of the game. Then a difficulty arises, insurmountable barriers, he fights, loses and thinks: "I can't do it!" That's the second of the two, the counter postulate. It means one slows down on a given course or sidesteps away from it: perhaps it even comes to a full stop.

Just thinking "I can't do it" within the game isn't enough, though, but at the moment of overwhelm, when he loses grip on his anchor points, he is for an instant outside the game, and has sudden theta-power to make a counter-postulate that even though he is in a low emotional state, is comparably powerful to the initial game postulate.

To come to a full stop on a game, to submerge a game postulate fully, it takes quite a number of counter-postulates. One usually isn't enough. Yet a game postulate doesn't disappear just because it became submerged by counter-postulates! It's still there and kicks up against the counter-postulates trying to silence it.

This, and only this, is the true source of the inner tension called “charge” - the friction between a games postulate and its counter-postulates.

Everyone knows what it means to have to decide between two *known* options of equal value (strawberry ice cream or vanilla?) - but that’s nothing compared to the strain produced between the two *unknown* options of postulate and counter-postulate. The depression, the massy-ness resulting from such inner strain is called a **Goals Problems Mass or GPM**. It goes without saying that any “normal” problem is aggravated and made unsolvable when it restimulates an already existing GPM.

The term “GPM” describes the sequence of events leading up to a mental mass. First step: there is a postulate towards a goal; second step: upon hitting a barrier, there is a postulate away from the goal. Result: a standstill and indecision. Third step: as one doesn’t know which way to go, one puts attention (theta quanta) on the postulate, the counter-postulate, the postulate, the counter-postulate, the postulate, the counter-postulate, and so on, can’t decide on either of the two and in the end gives up altogether.

Now that one has thoroughly energized this postulate-pair, one feels massy, misemotional and depressed. To put it shortly: unknowingly putting attention on goal and counter-goal lead to a problem which eventually results in a mass (and ultimately in a psychosomatic illness).

Let us look at an example of someone attempting to submerge his games postulate by counter-postulates: John wants to be a performing jazz guitarist. He studies hard at it but fails for various reasons. Not good enough (counter-postulate). To stay within the trade he decides to give guitar lessons (survival compromise). He doesn’t make a very good job of it as it isn’t really what he wanted to do. All pupils are stupid, anyway (counter-postulate). He becomes a jazz critic for the local paper (compromise). Being rather depressed now, he takes to the bottle. A man needs a drink off and on, after all (counter postulate). He winds up being a street bum and sleeps under railway bridges (compromise). He is picked up by the Salvation Army, becomes a fervent follower and sings in their choir. The Lord has saved him (counter-postulate against his own responsibility). He becomes a preacher and speaks out loud against jazz music and other degraded features of modern society (compromise). And so on. All done to submerge, drown, wall up, forget that he really wanted to be a performing jazz guitarist! He couldn’t have the loss of not becoming one, couldn’t cancel his games postulate in all serenity and make a new and different one. He acted *against* it. And that was his mistake. No havingness. Bad loser. (Ax. 11.)

IMPLANTS

Sometimes GPMs are forcefully installed in people, like for example in brainwashing. The person is made to “forget” his original intentions and conditioned to go for their opposite or for whatever his tormentor imposes on him. Hubbard calls this **implanting**. Just as one can implant foreign tissue into an organism, one can - by using

the combination of pain, drugs and hypnosis - implant an idea into the mind of a person. That this is not a thing of the future can be gathered from the words of James V. McConnell in a 1970 issue of *Psychology Today*: "The day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis, and astute manipulation of reward and punishment, to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior and personality. (. . .) We should reshape society so that we all would be trained from birth to want to do what society wants us to do. We have the techniques to do it. (. . .) No-one owns his own personality.?"

The methods listed by McConnell are fairly crude compared to what they have in stock today, 20 years later. In January 1991 the University of Arizona hosted a conference entitled "NATO Advance Research Workshop on Coherent and Emergent Phenomena in Bimolecular Systems". The organizer of the conference, Dr. Hameroff, said: "An individual may then be able to transfer his or her consciousness to an artificial environment when their body approached expiration."

Isn't this great? They can strip your mind off you and store it. This is coming very close to the sophisticated techniques used earlier on the time track and by some space civilizations of the present where implanting isn't only done on the spirit-plus-body composite but as well on thetans who have no more substance to grab them by than their energy fields. (We'll come back to that in the chapter on Xenu.)

Through implanting, a thetan "becomes his bank" much more irreversibly than by the mere creation of a ridge or by contacting an entity. This is because implants usually contain precautions against their detection such as the command to forget and false data regarding their time and location. Worse, implants degrade thetans to such a state of victimization that they see their only chance to survive in identifying with the implanter and "becoming him". They will now do to others as he did to them. (This explains a lot of what goes on in prisoner-of-war camps or concentration camps.) One step removed from this but equally disastrous, is a thetan identifying with an entity he has acquired that was created at a time when *another* was implanted, which in a roundabout way will make that thetan either dramatize the role of the victim or the role of the implanter - or both of them alternately, depending on what restimulators are prevalent in his environment.

MIND-SHARING

Ridges have one rather peculiar feature: they can wander from one thetan to the next and so become what we call entities. The "lubricant" facilitating this, is affinity, particularly when it comes in the form of pity. ("Pity" in this context means "reactively identifying with a victim to such an extent that one almost becomes that victim oneself" - something entirely different from the very desirable attitude of "karuna", a Sanskrit term meaning ("compassion guided by wisdom".)

As an example, consider Mary, our speed-happy lady. She created a ridge during her accident in an effort to keep the steering wheel from penetrating her chest, to fend off the effects she had involuntarily created. Everytime she says "It's killing me . she

partly re-creates the ridge, and accordingly suffers a depression. This happens a lot as “It’s killing me” is one of her stock phrases. (What a sweltering day! It’s killing me’ - followed by a pain in the chest.)

Now supposing Mary and her friend John who loves fast cars himself, were sitting in their lounge and she were saying: “Oh, I’d love to go out for a drive, but it’s one of those days . . . I’m afraid it’s killing me”. At this moment she would be re-creating the ridge and feel depressed. John, with real pity for her (and for himself as well), might say: “Oh, you poor dear, always this chest problem of yours, just when we could go out and have fun”, and he would extend this tremendously strong affinity bridge over to her. In order to help her-he adjusts to her emotional level. A little later John goes outside feeling a little heavy-hearted, sits down at the wheel of their sports car to go for a spin all by himself, and just as he picks up speed he feels like a piece of lead was on his chest and he can’t breathe. “Phew”, he says as he slows down, “what on Earth is this? It’s killing me!” What happened? John made a copy of his lady friend’s postulate when he was down at her emotional level, and from now on this ridge can be re-created by him, too. It didn’t leave her space, though! They *both* have it now. John momentarily shared Mary’s mental force field. He “went into her **valence**”. (“Valens”, Latin, means “force”.) This explains why children “inherit” certain traits of character from their parents.

A ridge, once it has wandered from its creator to some other host, is an entity, as we already know. The ridge has been copied. Its original creator didn’t get rid of it, though, because it consists of his theta quanta. We heard before that each theta quantum has a branding stamp on it, consisting of its creator’s postulate and emotion at the moment of its creation. Only because of this can one tell who the owner is. The real difference between an entity and a ridge is that an entity in contrast to a ridge consists of at least two brands of theta particles: those of the original creators and those of the second owner who subconsciously registered their foreign ridge, and in trying to keep it out, made a copy of it. John couldn’t have it that his lady friend was depressed (no havingness) and so counter-created against this. He didn’t let her ridge be but made a little ridge of his own and pushed it against hers and thus an entity was formed. It is glued to John by John’s own attention units.

In theory this wandering-about of ridges could go on indefinitely; yet in practice one rarely finds an entity with more than a handful of hosts. You erase it by tracing these hosts from last to first and finding all the postulates made along the way.

The moral of the tale: one is responsible for possessing one’s entities, because one made the glue oneself. But wouldn’t a very aware person keep himself free of this? Certainly - as long as he managed to *stay* very aware! It’s like this: imagine yourself sitting in a malaria swamp with your binoculars and your notepad, doing some bird-watching. There’s no-one else there except the mosquitoes. You are a very aware person and you usually notice a mosquito the moment it settles down on your bare arms and kill it with a slap of your hand. But when at long last, after hours and hours of waiting, this unbelievably rare and almost extinct specimen of *ornithos bipedis* appears (the one with the yellowbeak?, you remain motionless and glued to your binoculars for the next

fifteen minutes without noticing that half a thousand mosquitoes are feeding on your blood. And then you come down with malaria and wonder why.

It goes the same with very aware thetans who come to this planet for the first time (pretty clean) and then slowly get caked up with the stuff that flies about here. It takes more than just awareness to cope with this. It takes a spiritual cleansing method to stay on top of things - such as the traditional techniques of the past, both eastern and western. Theta quanta are separated from each other by finding out who created them, when, where and why. Recognizing this makes them vanish (Fac. 20, 28).

RESPONSIBILITY AND REINCARNATION

In order to cleanse oneself spiritually one usually looks inwards, because that's where the cause of one's problems lies. Inevitably one will find that one did something stupid, awkward and sometimes even terrible, and that this led to some disaster or other. For example one might have belted down a motor way, didn't pay attention for as little as a split second and - wham! - car crash. Result: a shock, a broken leg and a general fear of driving cars. And no matter if it was, from the viewpoint of the law, the other person's fault - one cannot deny that oneself, too, was involved. What did one do to help bring the accident about, what didn't one do to avoid it? How was one responsible for it? This system of thought does not permit blaming others. It puts the responsibility for one's condition upon oneself. This condition is the result of one's past good and bad deeds - a concept well known in Buddhism under the name of 'karma'. Karma, a Sanskrit term, means 'a deed'. Lifetime after lifetime bad karma is accumulated whenever one has acted irresponsibly.

The bad deeds of one's past draw one's attention away from the present. One is not "fully here and now". This leads to non optimum or **aberrated** behavior. Taken from Latin, "aberrated" means literally "having wandered off the path". One doesn't go from A to B as one intended to, but gets distracted and winds up somewhere else.

Of course, one doesn't live life alone. There *are* others, there *are* harsh circumstances. Yet there is no use complaining. One is getting what one deserves. There is not one incident that would have happened by chance. One experiences what one experiences because one considers that sort of experience necessary as a learning process, a challenge, to make amends, whatever. One may die and go through the same set of experiences lifetime after lifetime. One's own agreements make one do this. (One has to dive deep down into the individual or even the collective unconscious to find these agreements, yet they can be found.)

Only after having suffered sufficiently what one considered worth suffering, will one say: "I'm tired of this. Why is this happening to me?" And in the attempt to come off the "wheel of birth and death" called "samsara" in Buddhism and Hinduism, one turns towards philosophy and religion for an answer. The living of life didn't seem to provide answers and so one looks "higher up" for them.

Reincarnation can cause severe social problems. Just because a person has died physically he or she doesn't let go of his intentions and desires. Far from it! An example of this is the spreading neo-Nazi cult in Germany and elsewhere. They are young people in their teens and early twenties, so they must have had their last death between 1970 and 1980. Assuming they had died in their late sixties, the birth years of their last lives would lie between 1910 and 1920 - and that's the generation which grew up around Hitler and supported him! And now, having come again, they of course attempt to repeat living the "glorious" days of their past. Naturally, their victims keep coming back as well. And so one may expect this game to go on for a while.

The trouble is, you can't keep people from reincarnating. But you can audit them and take their aberrations off their minds.

THE CLEAR

The end result of contacting suppressed incidents in one's past lives is a clear mind; the person who achieves this end phenomenon is called a "Clear". Although he has worked off some of his "bad karma", he has not found and erased each single traumatic incident of the past few thousand years on his time track, rather he has become able to handle such memories as they come up. He has acquired the ability to "have" them when the environment restimulates them. He can handle mental mess without assistance, doesn't get frightened by it or identify with it. And, as it goes with any and all abilities, he is responsible for keeping this ability intact - if he doesn't, it will deteriorate and he won't be a Clear much longer.

Being Clear is not limited to one lifetime, by the way, as long as one keeps the ability in good shape. Some years ago a Clear (let's say his name was Steve) told me that after only a few hours of the first auditing he ever had in this life, it turned out that he had become Clear in his previous life. Then as now he lived in Birmingham. He could recall details of the small auditing group where he used to go, and he remembered the lady in charge. It all took place in her lounge. Apparently he, an elderly man, had died soon after becoming Clear. After recalling all this Steve went home to Birmingham to see if that lady still lived at the same address. She did. He, now a young lad of twenty years, rang the door bell and waited. She, now a lady in her sixties, opened the door and said, slightly puzzled at the grinning young man in front of her: "Can I help you?" He said: "Don't you recognize me?" And she did! Whereupon there was some hugging and kissing and ushering him in to the lounge and cups of tea and stories of the old days.

There are degrees of Clearness - one could be Clear regarding one's own past lives, regarding one's entities, regarding the energy field organizing one's body, regarding one's compulsive interaction with the physical universe, and so on. A Clear in the *full* sense of the word would be an entirely un-aberrated being. He would not unknowingly be attached to irritating thoughts or pictures from any source, no, he would be right here and now, in present time, without any distraction. Consequently one would expect him to live up to the requirements of a given situation to the full, and to resolve any difficulty to the greatest benefit of all concerned. And indeed, to keep his Clear-ness

intact, he would *have* strive to find an “optimum solution” on the principle of the greatest good for the greatest number of participants. In this he would follow the guideline that his integrity and his honor are more important than his immediate life⁴. This way he would come out of any situation without any bad feelings from or towards others and therefore wouldn't ever be drawn back into his past. He'd be free for the next moment.

In his actions he would not put out a big noisy ego but tune in and harmonize. Despite being in full control of the situation he would scarcely be noted. His deeds would be effortless - an ability termed “wu-wei” in the philosophy of the Tao-te-ching: doing without effort.

Hubbard's concept of “being” ties in with this concept of wu-wei. “*If one is afraid to be, one will, of course, become logical.*”⁵ This means that once one has lost one's spontaneity and needs to think, figure and come to “logical conclusions”, one is lagging behind - and the situation runs away from one. One has made the mistake of not intuitively “being” all factors pertaining to a given situation. One went “out of tune”. This is the source of haste, wrong decisions and failures. Thinking does not replace a knowing certainty. Knowing through being is senior to knowing through data (Fac. 28).

A nice example of this is given in the autobiography of the Indian yogi Yogananda⁶. On his way to America in 1920 - he went by steamer - Yogananda was asked to give a speech, yet his English was only rudimentary at the time. However, his firm belief in God and his certainty that he was going to make it somehow gave him the strength to step on the podium, face the audience - and the most embarrassing silence occurred. The audience tittered. But suddenly Yogananda was “inside” the English language and gave a fiery speech on Hinduism which earned him a standing ovation. People told him that his English was brilliant. When the event was over Yogananda didn't have a clue what had happened and how. But somehow he had managed “to be English” and the English language poured out of him.

The two abilities mentioned above - that of being in present time and that of finding optimum solutions - add up to ethical behavior. One would expect a Clear, within the limits of his awareness, to be ethical. If a game were played in the spirit of wu-wei, that is, without egotism or any compulsiveness about winning or losing, if everybody involved were granted his personal rightness instead of being made wrong (to make oneself right), a game could be fun even when one lost it.

.2 Soul and Body

THE BREATH OF LIFE * LIFE FORCE AND MEMORY STORAGE *
CHILD DEVELOPMENT * PSYCHOSOMATICS * PRANA *
CHAKRAS * CH'I * KAHUNA * DRUGS, HYPNOSIS, MEDICINE *
EUROPEAN OCCULTISM * FRINGE MEDICINE *
THE RESONANCE PRINCIPLE

THE BREATH OF LIFE

In the last chapter we heard of spirits, ghosts, demons, of mental masses and energies composed of theta quanta, and of a thetan who has the double function of a player of games and of a static standing above all games.

With that, we have described what Hubbard calls a **universe** *a whole system of created things*¹. One creator and his created things make one universe. That's *one* thetan. And as other thetans, too, have created their universes, each person carries his universe about and feels at home there. And only to the extent that these universes interact and overlap can there be agreements and disagreements on games and opinions and thus, reality.

So far we only spoke about the interaction of thetans and their thetanish universes - now what about the body? After all, here on Earth this is a device quite commonly used for playing one's games. How do thetan and body interact? Hubbard quips: "*The body is a carbon-oxygen engine which runs at 98.6 degrees F. The theta being is the engineer running this engine in a Homo Sapiens*"¹. Fair enough, one must distinguish between oneself and the body - but again, *how* do thetan and body interact? One surely - as a thetan - doesn't take care of each heart beat and bowel movement from birth to death, does one! And indeed, we have to differentiate further: between thetan, body and an energy field organizing this body and adding life to it. "*The body is directly monitored by the genetic entity in activities such as respiration, heartbeat and endocrine secretion; but these activities may be modified by the thetan.*"¹

The **Genetic Entity or GE** - that's a theta energy field permeating the body and taking care of its needs in terms of growth, healing, maintenance and procreation. It powers the material set of genes. Elsewhere this field is known as "aura" (a Greek word) or "soul" (a Germanic one). Both words mean "breath" and refer to the breath of life without which the body would be dead matter. In the Roman world one distinguished between "animus", signifying "spirit, mind, will" (thetan), and "anima", the "vital principle, soul, life" (GE). A similar distinction was made by the Greeks with "psyche" and "eros".

LIFE FORCE AND MEMORY STORAGE

Body and thetan perceive and experience on two different levels. The body always suffers when it gets hurt: the spirit not always. Think of sports accidents - a few

broken ribs are considered part of the fun! And as long as the thetan considers it fun to get hurt, he will expect the body to heal, and the body will indeed heal. But nevertheless, the “life force” permeating and surrounding the body will record the accident and store the information. The aura - or, in Hubbard’s terms, the GE - is an information carrier.

So there are two parties involved in running a body. The thetan steers it about and the Genetic Entity does growth and maintenance jobs. The body by itself does nothing. The Genetic Entity has only one purpose in mind - to make the body survive under all circumstances. When the body gets hurt, the GE will pour out theta quanta against the survival-endangering intruder, thus forming a ridge - just like the thetan does. So the GE is very well equipped for doing its job; indeed, it is *“that beingness not dissimilar to the thetan which has carried forward and developed the body from its earliest moments along the evolutionary line on Earth (...) It has no real personality, it is not the “I” of the body. This is the “mind” of an animal, a dog or a cat or a cow.”*¹

In any incident, two separate modes of experiencing are involved. For example during an operation under anesthesia the thetan usually leaves the body and observes the operating table from above, whereas the GE records the details from within. Running the auditee through such an incident from his own viewpoint will make him recall his own considerations and emotions at the time; yet running him through it from within, from the viewpoint of the GE, will produce heavy emotions of loss, physical sensations and pains.

This poses an interesting question: who is actually there when a person is under intensive care for months or even years? Heart is beating, EEG still registers on the brain, food is given intravenously - who is kept alive here? The person himself or only a forlorn GE?

The ridges formed by the GE are called **engrams**, a Greek word meaning something like “inscription”. An engram contains all information received by the body cells at the time they were hurt. The link is the GE. It records and stores accidents and injuries as mental image pictures created on the basis of theta quanta. The engram is such a picture.

By its dictionary definition, an engram is “an enduring change, believed to occur in the protoplasm of nerve tissues in response to stimuli, which may account for the acquisition of skills, lasting memories, etc.” Hubbard took this a step further by saying that although all sorts of stimuli get imprinted on the cells, the learning process as such isn’t done by the body proper but by the energy field he calls Genetic Entity.

The definition quoted goes back to 19th century psychology investigating the phenomenon of memory, i.e. the ability to recall incidents in the form of mental images. Semon, a German psychologist, proposed a theory in 1911 that all organic life in order to survive, depended on its past, and that the present is to be understood as the result of the accumulated experiences from earlier existence’s. These residues of the past, contained in a supra-personal unconscious mind, Semon called “engrams”.

Only recently Semon's and Hubbard's views were confirmed by the English biologist Rupert Sheldrake who found evidence that "morphogenetic" or form-giving fields act as information carriers and form the vital intelligence of living organisms ⁷. He concludes that the wide range of intelligent plant, animal and human behavior can only be explained in these terms and not by heredity alone.

According to Sheldrake, the existence of genes inside a seed do not suffice to explain the flexible behavior of a growing tree which is trying to make it against all the odds by turning this way and that, by assuming a certain individual form, by being aware of environmental change and adjusting to it. The "intelligence" of the tree makes it survive, not its genes alone.

Once when a huge old tree was felled, I actually "saw" the morphogenetic field or Genetic Entity of that tree. The chainsaw had bitten its way through the trunk, the tree fell and crashed to the ground - yet the "soul" of the tree remained upright! For a moment it was like there were two trees, the material one on the ground and the energy image of it still standing. A tremendous wave of shock, incomprehension, disappointment and finally grief was sent out by this tree-soul. My own GE reacted strongly; I felt my stomach turning to jelly. My wife, observing the same phenomenon, had tears streaming down her face. After a few seconds the tree-soul dissolved and disappeared.

Some plants have very strong fields. Recently I saw a Hibiscus bud opening and one could clearly see how its GE-field extended all around the physical bud and "pulled it into shape", as it were. It wasn't the bud expanding into the space around it but rather the reverse - the unfolding blossom "imploding" into the ever-expanding field around it.

An engram is not formed each time one cuts one's finger. The GE would know how to deal with this as part of its basic program. But as soon as it cannot cope, as soon as the situation gets out of hand and the GE feels desperate, the incident is recorded as an engram. Examples for that would be non-programmed and irreparable damages and deaths caused by torture, mutilation, radiation, electromagnetic interference, electric shock and other environmental stress not foreseen in the "original blueprint" (of which we'll hear more in chapters and 6).

Engram pictures are kept in the data banks of the GE way beyond body death and form part of its "survival program". It has learned what to avoid - and that comes useful when the GE enters a future body. Indeed, death can be seen as a vital positive part of the learning process of evolution. The intimacy of experience of an overwhelming environmental force provides specific data on how it works, so that protection can be devised. For example the shell-less mollusk, rolled about over the rocks by the surf, getting damaged and killed that way. learns three things: one, that hardness is a winning survival tactic - after all the rocks won: two, he adopts the blueprint of the structure of a hard shell, by close molecular-level contact: and maybe three. that a circular form permits rolling with the movement of the tides. So the rocks

told the mollusk how to grow a shell, and this understanding became part of the morphogenetic field (or GE, depending on one's terminology).

So not only the spirit goes from one lifetime to the next, taking a new body each time, the Genetic Entity does as well. Both not being physical but mental entities - are immortal. However, at the moment of death they don't go parallel ways but take different bodies in their next incarnation.

The difference between a thetan's reincarnation and that of the GE is considerable, in that a thetan continues from body to body as an individual, whereas the GE merges with some sort of "general GE field and data pool" which all GEs are connected with according to species and where they get their data from and feed new data to. (Sheldrake actually mentions this in context with global learning phenomena within particular species.) After body death complete GEs actually "go up" to the general GE Data Pool and come "raining down" again when a new body is being created during sexual intercourse. (The research leading to these insights is covered in chapter 6.)

So strictly speaking, there are no "past" lives for a thetan. Existing as an immortal individual, he continues along an unbroken line, sometimes with a body, sometimes without. The GE, however, ceases existing after body death, merges with the GE Pool and "drops down as a new entity at the moment of fertilization. During a sexual act a new GE for that particular species stands by, ready to start monitoring cell growth. This has been variously confirmed in auditing sessions. As soon as the sperm enters the egg cell, the GE gets drawn in on the scene, triggered by a resonance phenomenon (affinity) between the two parent GEs and the GE Pool. The data stored in the banks of one's GE are therefore not "personal" to that GE, rather they are *all* the data (engrams) that ever where accumulated by GEs since the beginning of bodies on Earth, regardless of species. (In following up engrams, auditees have been found to contact incidents suffered by non-human species as a routine occurrence.)

To ascertain that the body is dead for sure the GE may persevere in it for some days at least, sometimes for even more than a week. Then it dissolves and lifts off like an amorphous blue cloud of smoke. Perhaps it is for this reason that we feel horrified at the sight of a recently deceased person whose GE is still in the body - it is neither quite alive nor quite dead. Our own GEs react to that. A similar horror befalls us when we deal with people who have a "dead" GE and who act with unfeeling, inhuman cruelty. Here we have a thetan who has utterly suppressed his GE- a "spirit without a soul".

The GE's one and only purpose is to make the body survive, no matter what. To this end, it contains all sorts of construction and maintenance programs. Any race or species has its own highly specialized Genetic Entity. The senior, most important programs are the sexual ones as they ensure the survival of the race. It is they which determine the typically female and male behavior patterns to be found at the bottom of all cultures on this planet (and of course, in the animal and plant realms, too).

A person will have no difficulty behaving in accordance with the patterns of his sex when he has been of the same sex in his past life and agrees with being it again in

his present life. Yet a thetan used to male bodies may feel very ill at ease in a female one and protest the patterns imposed on him by the GE program. Likewise it is possible that a wrong program gets triggered in the GE, meaning that a male body is run on a female pattern. The person involved will feel very uncertain about his sexual role and his general social behavior. It's the GE and not the thetan determining the sexual 'flavor' of human interaction and communication.

Because man is composed of spirit and body, and because the body is run and powered by the Genetic Entity, the three of them - thetan, GE and body - form a composite. The engrams (memories of past deaths, mutilations, accidents, etc.) contained in the GE are therefore part of man's composite subconscious, his reactive mind. When restimulated, they appear as pictures on his mental screen and cause irritation, depression and psychosomatic illnesses - just as his own thetanish pictures would.

Many people only feel the effects of this and are not aware of the actual film on the screen. Of an advanced Clear one would expect this as a matter of course. He would determine the correct source of a mental image picture (be it himself, an entity or the GE) and erase it. Failing to discriminate between one's own and the GE's pictures may lead one to believe that one was a snail in one's past life, and that one will be re-borne as a cockroach when one doesn't behave up to standard in this life. This is a false notion. The thetan always chooses the human form because that's the only way he can get the sort of things done that are important to him. I have never met anyone who was a rain worm in one of his past lives. Auditees do indeed come up with such pictures, yet after brief inspection they invariably turn out to stem from the GE.

The GE runs the body, the spirit lives in it. When the spirit leaves the body at night, the GE finds time to cleanup. When the body is hurt, the spirit is wise to stay cool, calm and collected; thus he enables the GE to activate its healing programs. Getting excited doesn't help at all.

A thetan usually claims his body somewhere between conception and birth. However, there have been cases of people "robbing" bodies from others at a body age of 15 or even 25 years. They sneaked in when the actual proprietor was out, such as after an accident or during a prolonged illness, or perhaps they came to some gentleman's agreement with him. In either case they tried getting around the usual waiting period of 20 years from babyhood until being taken seriously again.

It is actually quite puzzling that such people should immediately feel at home in the social environment of the new body. Where did they get the data from (name of mother and father, language spoken, home address, childhood memories etc.)? Auditing sessions revealed that all such vital informations actually pertaining to the thetan, are "photocopied" and filed by the GE. because they are, on a social level, survival data. The new thetan taking the body over from its former proprietor inherits this information package, stored in the GE, as part of the deal. The former proprietor, as he leaves, keeps these data with him, stored in his own mind, because they are part of his personal time

track. The GE does not keep social survival data till after death but erases them. It only stores data of somatic importance.

(This is why it takes many generations of “ learning by engrams ‘ before a breed of dogs differentiates out. The GE of a dog may learn within the span of one life that it should retrieve ducks or herd sheep but forgets it from one life to the next, because it’s not part of the “ basic dog program” . However, many dog generations of reward and punishment in true Pavlovian spirit will make the lesson sink in slowly.)

CHILD DEVELOPMENT

Embryos are fully conscious in the sense of the GE being present and recording from the moment the sperm penetrates the ovum. Should a thetan, too, be present at such an early stage, he would have an awareness of his own, separate to that of the GE. For this reason Hubbard understandably spoke out strongly against abortion in "Dianetics".

His views stand in obvious contrast to the profound insights of modern science teaching us that the fetus is just a bunch of growing cells but not a person. With that we are not any wiser than the Middle Ages where they said that the soul does not enter the body before that body is three months old (which made it alright to kill embryos up to that age?). Yet in the light of our findings, abortion- whether done earlier than three months pregnant or later - doesn't seem so much a simple operation to remove some unwanted growth from the womb but could be likened to murder. With all due respect to a woman's right to play her game and enjoy her freedom - but what about the GE and *its* game? Here is the area of friction, the eternal clash of intentions between spirit and GE, both demanding their rights, both forced to share the same body, both unable to leave. What a planet!

From childhood to old age, man is severely influenced by the demands of the GE. What is foremost on his mind? Food, drink, sex, body care: not too warm, not too cold, precautions against illness and senility. Death - a horror. On the opposing vector stands the ascetic fighting and suppressing his GE by self-denial, severe fasting and a vow to celibacy. Yet another and very sinister expression of this clash between thetan and GE can be found in all the prison camps that ever were, where the torturer, knowing that the thetan can't help returning to his body this side of death, makes the sexual organs of men, women and children his favorite target. What a planet!

Children are "real people". They are not born as "clean slates"; they have lived before. And apart from a treasure box full of abilities they bring with them, too, a black coal scuttle loaded with reactive bank.

As analogy, imagine your new-born baby to be a grown man who came to live with you in your house. Here is someone who looks back on the experience of a long life of his own (past lives), who claims to get frequent phone calls from his friends and enemies (because of his intact awareness of ghosts, demons and disembodied thetans) yet can't prove it and therefore frequently seems irrational, and who has unexpected body needs (by GE command). Now supposing you'd keep telling this man:

Hush, don't do that!", "Oh, we are still a little too small for that, aren't we?, You are imagining all this!", "You can't be hungry again!" and such like - what would he feel like?

One particular phenomenon resulting from the conflict between thetan and GE is the love-hate relationship between children and parents. The child as a thetan is interested in games, fairness and justice: he runs away from the unjustly punishing

parent, from criticism that. not being based on explicit policies, appears wholly arbitrary to him (and actually quite often is). The GE, however. knowing that the parent is the sole chance for the body s survival, draws the child close to the parent. And so. much as a child may hate his parents on the intellectual level, he or she nevertheless ‘ loves ‘ his parents on the instinctive animal level of the GE.

In human growth and social development the data banks of the GE play a vast role. It may be assumed that smiling, crying, blushing etc. are not governed by the genes but by the GE’s most basic programs. And just watch children change during puberty! They turn from little angelic beings to sad introverted little lumps as soon as the GE starts installing its procreation programs. The body, so far a useful tool to the child, starts playing up in unexpected ways, the child (as a thetan) doesn’t know what’s happening - and introverts.

The desire to procreate is a two-faced affair because the aspect of ‘ must do something for bodily survival’ stirs up all sorts of past incidents of non-survival in the GE’s bank, memories of death. The child begins to be death-oriented and perhaps suicidal, or- if those past incidents contain the elements of cruelty, sadism, torture - the child will dramatize this by tearing off the legs of a frog or by actually mutilating and murdering his fellows.

The patterns imposed by the GE stay intact for the longer part of adult life - as long as sexual potency remains intact. Only when the sex drive lessens do such dramatizations subside and we get the “ wisdom of old age” .

PSYCHOSOMATICS

To briefly summarize: according to Hubbard, man is understood as an interactive system (a universe) consisting of the following components: static (the thetan unmanifested) - thetan (the thetan manifested as mental energy, i.e. as a mind) - ridges and entities (the thetan’s reactive bank) - the Genetic Entity (and *its* reactive bank, i.e. engrams) - the flesh body. Interaction within the components of one particular universe and between several different universes is done by means of theta quanta (attention units). The action of theta quanta and the performance of a given universe as a whole depends on postulates.

In terms of emotion this means that we are looking at three overlapping fields. each of them pulsing at its own rate; yet taken together they even out on a common denominator between them, on a general vibration. It’s like a stage was lit with a spot light of one color and a second spotlight of a different color was superimposed on the first one; the result is a light of a third color. This conglomerate of vibrations is what we consider “ a person” .

“Beings of the class of Homo Sapiens are composite beings motivated by a theta being, entities, the GE and the environment.” ⁸

The sequence leading up to psychosomatic illnesses roughly runs like this: a thetan plays a game and suffers a crash; his body is hurt. The thetan makes a counter-postulate against his initial games postulate and thus constructs a GPM; he records the incident including emotions and postulate as a mental image picture. Simultaneously the GE makes its own recording, emphasizing the sensations and pains the body suffered (engram). After the incident is over, both types of mental image pictures slowly disappear. Destimulation has occurred.

When the counter-postulate is restimulated, the misemotion of the incident is newly re-created by the thetan, he builds up charge and by resonance an engram is triggered in the GE's banks. This, when dramatized, incapacitates the body.

In short: a thetan indulging in a pessimistic attitude on some aspect of life will occasionally or chronically evoke the corresponding emotions; when this is done long enough and with sufficient volume (amplitude), these emotional vibrations will bridge over into the GE, restimulate engrams and produce unpleasant sensations and even pains in the body. Formula: attitudes - emotions - sensations - pains.

Between the three components constituting a universe various interactions and cross-restimulations may occur. A worried thetan may either directly affect the GE or first wake up an entity which in turn triggers some engram in the GE. Reversely, a chronically restimulated entity may beam its vibrations and postulates at the thetan who takes its thought and emotion up and reflects it down to the GE. The cycle may even start with the GE: triggered by environmental stimuli (poisons etc.) it may dramatize engrams which in turn affect either the thetan directly or via an entity.

Any combination is possible. I remember auditing a butcher who, twenty years ago, had suffered from what he called a nervous breakdown and since then was on psychiatric drugs because he felt suicidal. I asked him what it had felt like to have a "nervous breakdown". He said he got severe pains in the forehead, it went all black around him and he knew he was going to die. It had happened on a Monday evening, after several months of severe strain having to do with his business. He had felt over worked and slightly hopeless on that Monday. And as usual, like on every Monday morning, he had gone to the slaughterhouse to kill his animals. Cattle were killed with a bolt into the forehead. pigs with electric clamps on the forehead. So what would the animal GE feel like? Headache, darkness and a certainty that it was going to die. And that's what jumped over on the emotionally weakened butcher, affected *his* GE - and led to a "nervous breakdown with subsequent suicidal tendencies". It went from foreign GE to own GE to thetan.

The interaction between the universes of individuals may be a lot more intense than described above; this depends on the number of people involved in a certain incident. When some impact, like for example an airplane crash, happens to a number of people all at the same time. they will naturally resist the incident heavily, putting a tremendous amount of attention (theta energy) on it as a defense. They will wind up having the "same" picture - which isn't quite true as each of them had a different angle of observation. so there is a difference in place even though there may not have been a difference in time. But for practical purposes they do have the "same" picture, because

their theta quanta became so enmeshed with each other that they have effectively turned from being individual thetans to a cluster of thetans. From now on they are on an enforced telepathic communication line with each other. When one of them gets restimulated, the others will be, too - no matter where they happen to be in the world and no matter how much time has elapsed since the original incident. Every viewpoint equals every other viewpoint; everything experienced, thought or felt by anyone is thought, felt or experienced by everybody else - result: "we are all one". This, being a *reactive* agreement, is of course not known to the people involved. They are not aware of it but still can't help following it. They are stuck in the incident and so are stuck together.

To give an example: one woman complained about panicking in enclosed areas and not being able to get pregnant. In session we found a war incident of 1943 when her body was an eight months old embryo. Her mother was on her way to an underground bomb shelter because an air raid was expected. Whilst she was still walking on the street, a bomb fell on a nearby house and exploded. The woman fell to her knees, covered her head and when the danger was over, walked on. That was all. Yet only seemingly so! Under the "surface", a tremendous amount of interaction had happened. We kept going through the incident from beginning to end innumerable times, and still new aspects of it would open. It took a good fifteen hours (spread over two days); considering that this was the first lot of auditing the auditee had ever had, she did exceedingly well.

The following emerged: the crashing and splintering noises from the exploding house a) frightened both mother and baby as thetans and made them desire to get away and be elsewhere. As well it b) made the baby's GE wish the baby to be outside, to get born immediately, in order to ensure its survival; against this c) mother's GE argued as it wasn't the right time yet, therefore, in order to survive, one had better stay inside. So there was panic and unwillingness to give birth to the child; the interaction of these four viewpoints seemed sufficient to explain the auditee's trouble and in fact relieved her. The auditee had "become her mother". Yet this wasn't all! Mother had understandably attention on d) father, her hope "flew across" to where father was who happened to be busy rescuing people from an entirely different house in another part of town, filled with fear about the possibility of this happening to his own family as well. As father's viewpoint was available through mother, this could be resolved; the auditee who had "become father" since then, could disconnect from that viewpoint. There is more to come: as the bomb went off, it e) hurt and killed a few dozen people and f) disrupted a wedding party. All these viewpoints had to be considered. They could be "read off" through mother's viewpoint, because by involuntarily and uncontrollably flowing attention towards the incident, her theta quanta were glued together with those of the other people. A shared postulate of "this goes too fast!" was found (apart from her and mother's personal ones), again explaining the auditee's tendency to panic. She had effectively "become" all these victims. To continue with yet a further viewpoint, g): the bomber pilot was attacked by ground fire, released his bomb, his plane was hit, he jumped out and was killed whilst still in the air. His attention, too, had been on the exploding house, his target. Beyond that the auditee noticed h) all manner of discarnate beings, black and white ones, with evil and good intentions, being engaged in the

general fighting from a different plane of operation; she recognized herself to be involved in this fight and i) have a viewpoint “up there” as well as “down here”. She realized that this was in fact her first visit to Earth and that she was on a “special mission”. (We’ll come to that in later chapters.)

To get back to the point: the auditee since then continued to be *all* of these viewpoints simultaneously! She had “clustered” with all these others to some extent, creating an impression of their viewpoint at the moment of the attack. She held onto this as a theta link with the others who shared the incident.

The “command line” inside a particular “universe” runs from thetan to GE. The thetan as initiator is ultimately responsible for the condition of his universe, a condition usually characterized by “heated up” entities and a GE dramatizing engrams. The body therefore can be seen to be the “playing field” of the three parties involved (thetan, entities, GE).

As long as the thetan stays calm, all will be well. This seniority of the thetan over the GE is expressed in Axiom 55: “*Create, survive, destroy, the cycle of action accepted by the GE, is only a consideration which can be changed by the thetan making a new consideration or different action cycles*”. In a way, their relationship resembles that of a rider and his horse. The horse may shy at certain hurdles, particularly the old-time battle horse may have felt terrified at the blood it waded through, the screams piercing his ears, the death vibrations filling the air - yet the rider, quite against the nature of the horse, would keep it tightly controlled and functioning. Without such control one couldn’t do things - forbidding things from the viewpoint of the GE - like climbing icy mountain peaks or jumping out of airplanes with a parachute, without dying of fear.

Hubbard’s model of the mind is by no means a novelty. Similar models have existed for as long as man has walked the Earth, probably because once one has looked into one’s inner world long enough, one can’t help finding the same as everybody else. And equally long man has attempted to devise methods for the control of life force and the conversion of the tension between the warring parties (thetan, entities, GE) into positive, harmonic resonance and peaceful co-existence in mutual affinity, so as to have “*mens sana incorpore sano*”, a sane mind in a healthy body. A great deal of the knowledge about such methods was never accepted by “official” science and religion; partly for this reason and partly because one needed certain metaphysical initiations, it had to remain “occult”.

Yet the spiritual achievements of yogis, lamas, shamans and healers all around the world are much too well-documented as to be denied. The same goes for some western physicists, biologists and physicians. There appears to be a wisdom the cultures on this planet have shared throughout all ages, a wisdom that leads to practical results no matter what terminological differences might exist between the many schools of thought representing it. And as scientology deals with making a spirit sane and a body sound, with re-incarnation, out-of-body experiences and immortality of the soul, it obviously sits in the same boat with these other schools.

PRANA

Let us begin our esoteric world trip in India. There, religious and medical knowledge was handed down orally over some five or ten thousand years; the source of this knowledge are the Vedas, a collection of the insights and visions of seers or “rishis”. They spoke Sanskrit, a sophisticated ancient language (still in use today) featuring highly differentiated terms for a vast array of psychic phenomena, way beyond the vocabulary of any current European language.

The Sanskrit word for life force is “prana”. This term, along with a complete spiritual technology, was introduced to the West on a popular level by the yogi Paramhansa Yogananda in 1920. Yogananda taught Kriya Yoga, a meditation and breathing technique (pranayama) allowing the control of life force (prana) as it streams through the body. Breath control is seen to equal life force control. This way the yogi not only realizes that he is an immortal spiritual being but as well attains the power to have a healthy and even immortal body. For example in 1895, Lahiri Mahasaya, Yogananda’s teacher, predicted the day he was going to die, took his leave from his friends and died whilst sitting in a yoga position. After his death his body showed no signs of decay for many months. Whilst his flesh body was still lying in state, the master resurrected and showed himself in a prana body to many of his disciples.

The same demonstration of GE-control was given by Yogananda’s guru. Sri Yukteswar, who also predicted the day of his death, kept his body from decaying and re-appeared to comfort his disconsolate disciples. Yogananda himself did the same feat, except that he didn’t resurrect⁶. Not that India was the only place for this. Going back to Europe we find Theresa of Avila, a saint who died in 1582 and whose body is said to be undecayed up to this day.

Another well known teacher in the field of self-realization and life force control is Maharishi Mahesh Yogi who in 1958 started Transcendental Meditation (TM) in the west. In his system, “stress” is seen to be the major burden weighing Man down and contaminating his body. Mantra meditation serves to reduce stress. At the initiation ceremony, the person is given a mantra by his teacher. Then he sits for at least half an hour per day and concentrates on his mantra. In principle, no more is required. This way a spiritual cleansing process sets in.

A mantra is a syllable tuned to the person’s vibratory pattern. When repeated in meditation, it resonates from the lowest depth of the being up to his most subtle strata. All mantras are in resonance with the core mantra “Aum”. Aum again is supposed to be the vibration of all the life force permeating the universe. Therefore, if one’s mantra is correctly chosen by the TM teacher, one would eventually be in harmony with all phenomena of the spiritual and physical universes. (In terms of Hubbard’s model, the omnipresence of theta quanta could be seen to add up to this universal life force or prana and form the carrier medium for telepathic wave interactions.)

The actual technique of Transcendental Meditation might be compared to a candle burning in a dark room. The candle is the mantra; the dark room is the mind. At the edge of the space lit up by the candle, dark and evil fumes waft about. As soon as they enter the bright space, they get burnt up by the candle, and the bright space expands. More fumes are “restimulated by the mantra” burnt up, and more and more, and all the while the bright space expands. Because of this effect it is said of Gurudev, Maharishi’s own guru, that within two miles around his meditation abode there reigned peace amongst the birds and beasts of the forest.

CHAKRAS

Not only in the meditation disciplines of Hinduism and Buddhism but in practically all schools of self-exploration around the world it has been found that the Genetic Entity doesn’t exist as one ‘lump’ of energy, as a homogeneous field, but that it is structured internally. This structure has become known in the west in particular under the Sanskrit term “chakra”.

Chakra means “wheel”. Along a central channel (“sushumna”) from crotch to crown seven energy wheels can be experienced; they don’t exist in the physical but in the “astral” body and therefore cannot be found by surgery. However, there are body energy parallels in the way that the energy flow up and down the spine mechanically produces eddies and diversions matching precisely the chakras and that imbalance in the chakras thus relates to posture and vice versa. This has provided body manipulation therapists (e.g. in shiatsu) with an approach to remedying physical well-being.

From each chakra a number of channels (“nadis”) branch off; within these, prana flows and feeds one’s physical organs with life energy. With each chakra goes a certain vibration which can be evoked or boosted by specific mantras; with a lot of practice and skill the yogi will thus gain para-normal powers (“siddhis”). As well, each chakra appears to have a specific color, yet there doesn’t seem to be a clear agreement on what these are. Some sources say they follow the rainbow colors (bottom chakra red, top chakra purple), others give different specifications.

Thetans who don’t distinguish between themselves and their Genetic Entity will identify with certain chakras and their commands (postulates). This is evidenced by some people involuntarily pointing to their heart when they refer to themselves, the heart chakra being the seat of emotions. Others, under the command of the lower two chakras, will perceive the world exclusively as a playground for sex games and collect or even produce pornographic literature. Others again may be so introverted into their “intellectual” 6th chakra on the forehead that they altogether lose contact with body, sex drive and emotions. And so on. A whole characterology as well as a pattern of psychosomatic complaints go with these chakras, particularly when they are in an unbalanced condition.

The first chakra (crotch) is seen to contain “kundalini”, a vast reservoir of life energy which, if evoked, will gradually move up from chakra to chakra and

correspondingly boost one's spiritual powers (siddhis). When the practitioner has managed to "short-circuit" the first and the seventh chakra by purifying the intermediate chakras, kundalini will develop its full force and produce sensations like heavenly bliss, waves of light like from a million suns and a feeling of being beyond the beyond. All conscious thought is wiped out in this state; it escapes any description.

As the 7th chakra is situated *above* the head and so outside the body, one is dealing with ecstasy, literally translated "a state outside" and today often referred to as "OOB" (out-of-body experience). From this chakra not a limited number but "innumerable" nadis are felt to branch off, therefore the meditating person ("chela") feels connected to "all life", "the whole universe" or "God". This experience is considered by some to be enlightenment ("samandhi").

The flow of kundalini - or generally, that of prana - is inhibited by chakra impurities stemming from stress, that is, unresolved incidents of the past, "old" karma. Small wonder that practitioners of kundalini-yoga find abhorrent pictures streaming in on them, devastating emotions and destructive counter-postulates when their meditation opens such engrams.

In scientology terms one might say that each chakra contains certain aspects of the GE's bank which is *not* the thetan's-bank but represents the "collective phylogenetic unconsciousness" going back millions of lifetimes. From this bank, when it's "ignited" by kundalini touching certain chakras, considerable depressions, compulsions and fears may gush forth, sometimes leaving lasting marks on the unprepared chela, for which reason kundalini yoga is considered a dangerous discipline. (Auditing has been found to undo the unpleasant side effects of kundalini yoga.)

CH'I

Moving further east, to China and Japan, we find disciplines like T'ai-chi-ch'uan, Reiki, Aikido and Shiatsu, utilizing an energy called "ch'i". Ch'i, like prana, is seen to permeate the whole universe including one's body. "Primal Ch'i" (T'ai-chi or Tao) is pure unity; however, when it becomes active it manifests itself in the opposing principles of yin and yang which represent duality and activity.

Those who can tune in to ch'i and succeed in harmonizing its two dynamic aspects of yin and yang, enjoy good health, longevity, physical strength and even paranormal powers. Like yogis, they comfortably bathe in ice-cold water and with equal pleasure walk across red-hot volcanic lava. In a healthy person ch'i moves through the body as a balanced flow, in an unhealthy person its balance is disturbed.

Eastern fighting techniques, too - like judo, karate, kung-fu - are built around the concept of ch'i. The fighter draws his power from the area around the solar plexus, the body's primary accumulation center of ch'i. It is through this area (the 3rd chakra in Indian terms) that the all-engulfing cosmic ch'i streaming in via the 7th chakra (from the GE Pool) can be best activated and used. Acupuncturists, well introduced to the west by now, consider the condition of the body to be the result of harmonious or disharmonious

energy flowing through it along “meridians”. By sticking needles into certain node points, the flow of ch’i is facilitated, impeded or re-directed. (Again, these meridians are not different from the prana-carrying nadis observed by yogis.)

Some people, once they have become aware of prana or ch’i and have learned how to use it for themselves, actually do the next step which is bestowing it upon others to heal them. And just as an auditor must have more “free theta” than the auditee whose theta is tied up in his reactive bank, a ch’i healer can only work when he has more ch’i to give than the illness of his patient can absorb. He actually pumps ch’i into an ill person. It is quite remarkable. One Chinese healer on a TV documentary made a woman walk within half an hour who had been bed-ridden for fifteen years, with no conventional doctor having been able to help her. This healer obviously had a lot of free theta (or free ch’i, as he would probably say). Another, by holding 410 volt copper leads with his bare hands and making long sparks fly between them without getting hurt, demonstrated convincingly that the control of ch’i permits one to dominate physical universe energies.

In the practical work of healers and shamans, when they make the blocked life energies of their patients flow again, it is not uncommon that grief incidents are triggered and discharged. Releasing suppressed energy is quite naturally paralleled by the release of suppressed emotions, and often a ch’i session will turn into a therapy session where the patient tells his practitioner about childhood, birth or pre-natal engrams - the sort of thing contained in the banks of the Genetic Entity. This suggests that the terms “ch’i”, “prana” and “lambda force” (GE) refer to pretty much the same type of mental energy.

KAHUNA

Going even further east on our esoteric itinerary, we arrive at Hawaii and discover Kahuna, an ancient form of shamanism. Its practitioners, the Hunas, are known to make the dead come alive, to conjure up the visible images of kings and holy men of the past, making them walk about in processions for all to see; they use telepathy both to heal and to kill at great distances. (Perhaps one should cautiously add that they *did* do all that in the past before the practice of Kahuna was forbidden by U.S. authorities. Some Hunas seem to have kept up their tradition, though 9,76,77.) It is definitely worth our while spending some time studying this very clear and scientific system of Kahuna which almost uncannily compares to Hubbard’s model of the mind. Man is considered to be composed of three “selves”. The lower self takes care of the body; it’s the sort of mind a cow or dog would have. The middle self is what might be called “conscious man”. The higher self is something like an all-knowing “guardian angel” of the lower two. Through their interaction, life becomes possible.

The three selves communicate with each other and other people through a fine substance called “shadow stuff” or “mana”. As mana engulfs and permeates each of the three selves, three “shadow bodies” are formed. The shadow body of the lower self permeates all of the physical body. It contains a concept of the ideal condition for each

organ, each bit of tissue and each single cell. The combined shadow bodies of the lower and middle self form the bio-electric field around the body, the aura.

As the lower and the middle self run the life of a person, the exchange of information between them (on the basis of mana) is rather frequent and intense. The upper self, in contrast, is a supervising consultant addressed by the middle self in the form of prayer or meditation when in need. The answer occurs in the form of insights, visions and inspirations.

Five parallels to scientology are obvious: Firstly, man is seen as a thetan tied to a body and identified with the game of life (middle self), rather than with his own infinite or static aspect (higher self). In both systems the GE (lower self) is seen to contain the blueprint of an ideal body and to run the actual body accordingly.

Secondly, the lower self records continuously and non-selectively - precisely as the GE would. The middle self (thetan), capable of will power, logical thinking and reasoning, is fed the stored pictures from the next level below. When it reasons "sensibly" on any false data received from the lower self (engram data), it will arrive at aberrative solutions.

Thirdly, the middle self consults with the higher self (static) on how to carry on when life gets rough. Communication between the two selves occurs through shadow stuff or mana (theta quanta) and postulates.

Fourthly, Mana is not only the carrier of information between one's own three selves and those of others, it as well sticks to everything one has ever put attention on. Therefore man (his middle self) appears to hang in a web of tiny invisible lines connecting him to things, events and people of his past, present and future.

Fifthly, not only the middle selves but as well the higher selves of all men are closely interconnected with each other. They "overlap as infinities" as we said of thetans. Everybody, although an individual, is connected to the rest of the world through the shadow stuff (mana) and simultaneously, above the level of mana (on the plane of postulates), to all other infinite beings.

DRUGS, HYPNOSIS, MEDICINE

According to Huna lore, healing is done by directly addressing the lower self and simultaneously tapping the powers of the higher self. Life energy is then poured out by the higher self and utilized by the lower self. For example, a Huna healer will heal a broken ankle within seconds by reminding the lower self, i.e. the GE, of the ideal scene imbedded in it, thus extroverting it from the engram-agreement it became stuck in.

The middle self, and that's the crucial point, is totally by-passed. Healing is done by leaving the thetan out of the game. He thinks too much, gets too excited and so disturbs the healing process. The lower self (GE) knows full well what to do anyway, it

just needs a bit of assistance from the higher self. The think-think-think of the middle self is really in the way. On this observation all healing processes seem to be based, not only the ones we have referred to so far, but all medical help, actually. The patient is told: "You'll be alright, don't worry. Just take this medicine and give the body a good rest." They want the thetan out of the way so that the GE may do its job. The "medicine" doesn't actually have to do anything at all, as long as the thetan trusts "his doctor". Colored water works fine in many cases - especially if it tastes nasty! This is called "placebo" effect, and is a recognized aspect of treatment.

What we are dealing with here, is in fact hypnosis. The GE is set free to do its work as soon as the thetan's attention is fixated elsewhere. This fixation of attention, the result of hypnosis, is called "trance". As soon as a state of trance has been established, the GE can be addressed directly by the healer. You could, for example, put a coin on a man's hand, hypnotize the thetan and tell his GE that the coin was red-hot - and his hand will develop a blister. Reversely one can make it disappear by the same method. Some western hypnotherapists (particularly those of the Milton Erickson school) actually use this method to reduce the suffering of pain-afflicted patients in hospitals. Some even have their patients undergo surgical operations under hypnosis, with no anesthesia.

Other effects beyond mere healing may set in when neither thetan nor GE dramatize any aberrations - such as walking across red-hot coal, putting spikes through one's cheeks, getting crucified in a state of religious ecstasy, and so on. All of this seems to work as long as thetan and GE don't worry. As soon as they get worried, engrams get triggered and pains, psychosomatic illnesses and death follow.

Apart from hypnosis, other time-honored means of putting the thetan in a non-worried condition are drugs, alcohol, strong pharmaceutical medicines and narcosis. In the GE they restimulate old engrams of getting poisoned and it therefore thinks of death; the thetan gets the message and goes exterior, i.e. leaves the body. (He always does when the going gets rough and leaves it up to the GE to pick up the broken bits, much to the dismay of the GE.) Although this is known to work - and in fact works so well that the thetan does it for pleasure and takes drugs to escape the clutches of the GE at least temporarily - it has the side effect of landing the thetan in his bank with an almighty crash once the drug's effect lessens. He has to come back from his lovely carefree position outside, only to enter a body dramatizing the sensations and pains of many past deaths. (This is variously called "hangover" or "cold turkey", depending on the drug taken.)

Excessive drug taking may upset the fine interplay between thetan, entities and GE to such extent that their force fields collapse momentarily, leading to a gigantic super-restimulation accompanied by unconsciousness - a thetan in full grip of his various banks, rendering him insane beyond easy repair.

EUROPEAN OCCULTISM

Continuing our magical mystery tour further east, we reach the USA and - most unforgivably skipping over the vast lore of the American Indian - are back in the European tradition. There we find two branches outside “regular” religion and science - occultism and fringe medicine - both dealing with the tension between spirit and soul.

“Occult”, Latin, means “hidden”. The term refers to hidden knowledge that doesn’t meet the eye at first glance, to knowledge of the “astral” rather than the material world. In the 19th century, “occultism” came to be en vogue in some circles of society. Perhaps best known are Helena Blavatsky (1831-1891), the founder of Theosophy, and Rudolf Steiner (1861-1925), who developed Anthroposophy. Both took their inspiration from Vedic sources and frequently used Sanskrit terminology. In contrast, the qabalist Franz Bardon (1909-1958) who continued the “hermetic” tradition of ancient Egypt originating with Hermes Trismegistos, preferred fairly ordinary language. Bardon is said to be a re-incarnation of Hermes Trismegistos (meaning “the threefold master of magic”).

These three persons one might call “white magicians” who evoke helpful “elemental entities” and fend off the black destructive ones evoked by black magicians. One rather infamous representative of the latter category is Aleister Crowley (1875-1947) of the Ordo Templis Orientalis (O.T.O.), who, aided by heroin, combined black magic with blood and sex rituals.

Whereas Blavatsky and Steiner were students of occult lore, visionaries of astral mysteries but only marginally equipped with actual occult powers (siddhis), Bardon was a master of the craft, a famous stage magician who drew considerable crowds to the box offices of Dresden, Germany - and his magic wasn’t based on tricks, it was for real. He could read people’s life history and their future down to minute details as if it was written on their faces; by as much as a glance he could diagnose and heal illnesses (sometimes instantly, like the Hunas); he knew how to use chakras to install telepathic lines for defense and attack; and he was adept at evoking nature spirits (“elementals”) in order to make rainclouds or sunshine.

Blavatsky’s and Steiner’s psychological models by and large compare with that of Bardon; a different terminology is used, though. The Genetic Entity Steiner calls “ether body”; to Blavatsky it’s the “animal soul” sharing the physical body with the “human soul”. Steiner actually states that the ether body does its reconstruction work of the physical body during deep sleep when there is no disturbance from the “astral body” (Steiner’s term for thetan), and that the ether body dissolves after death (as one would say of the GE, too)!. All of these three occultists agree on the existence of a senior spiritual element called “akasha” or “ether”, source of the well-known “four elements”, fire, air, water and earth.

In Bardon’s system the “threesomeness” or perhaps “trinity” we could already detect in the system of the Hunas and that of Hubbard, is represented in simpler form than in those of Blavatsky and Steiner, so we’ll briefly sketch it. Bardon likens the all-pervading akasha to God (static). A splinter or spark of this is manifested in each man as his immortal spirit or “I”. This is akasha in its individualized form, the “mental body”

of man (thetan) and his most subtle level of existence. The mental body contains within itself the four elements as a mere potential; only when energized they form the “astral body” (probably compares to the GE). Additionally, so that one may get active in the physical world, a physical body is needed, too. The control line runs from “up top” downwards, from the mental body through the astral body into the physical body. Connection between the three bodies is made through “mental stuff” which Bardon considers to have electromagnetic properties.

FRINGE MEDICINE

Not only the occultists of Europe worked on the basis of the concepts we are discussing - some scientists, usually outsiders to the “main stream of knowledge” of their day, did as well. To name but a few: Paracelsus (1493-1541) was one of the first to claim that “unconscious motivations” were the reason for neurosis quite a claim at a time still dominated by the medical system of Hippocrates (460-377 B.C.) who didn’t allow any other explanation for mental or physical disorder but an “imbalance of juices”. The unconscious, the religious and the transcendental had no place in Hippocrates’ thinking. Yet Paracelsus proved that illness can be healed by placing magnets on the body. Doing so, he evidently influenced the lambda energy field of the Genetic Entity.

Robert Fludd (1574-1637), an earlier incarnation of Franz Bardon, stated that the microcosm of man paralleled the macrocosm of the universe, that man was surrounded by a magnetic field and that magnetic phenomena between the fields of two people explained a lot about human interaction. In the disharmony between microcosm and macrocosm Fludd saw the reason for illness.

Franz Anton Mesmer (1734-1815) recognized a force he named “animal magnetism”. Treatments done on this basis proved to be spectacular, particularly when he healed a psychosomatically blind woman. He was in such demand that he had to appear on stage and do mass healings. In 1799 Mesmer theorized that there must be a “physical fluid” filling the entire cosmos (which would supposedly compare to lambda, ch’i or prana).

Mesmer’s pupils began to argue against Mesmer’s “cosmic fluid” but found hypnotic trance to be a workable method in the healing of diseases. Hypnosis was extensively experimented with; towards the middle of the 19th century James Braid pioneered surgical operations under hypnosis and proved the mortality rate to sink from 60% in some cases! to a mere 5%. This promising development soon came to a halt, because in the course of the Industrial Revolution (it being as well a scientific revolution) new drugs and medicaments were invented, amongst them ether and chloroform. Anesthesia by chemistry came to be preferred to anesthesia by hypnosis, and hypnosis was decried as “unscientific” in this new age of materialist and mechanist science.

Hypnosis nevertheless lived on; it was handed from Ambroise Liebeault (1823-1904) to Hyppolite Bemheim (1840-1919) who actually coined the term “psychotherapy”, and finally to Sigmund Freud (1856-1939). However, after initial experimentation with hypnosis Freud proclaimed it useless and developed psychoanalysis. Here hypnosis is used in an extremely light form only, enough to relax the patient physically and mentally so that he may be able to explore his unconscious data banks - his reactive mind. (Eventually some Freudian methods wound up in the hands of Hubbard whose initial dianetics sessions around 1950 strongly resemble psychoanalysis - down to details like the patient lying on the couch and being put in “reverie”. Hubbard knew his psychology and was evidently an experienced hypnotist as well.)

Freud’s great pioneering idea was that all forms of neurosis have a non-physical cause and that this cause is to be found in “the unconscious”. The pictures contained in the unconscious are explained to be partly man’s “soul heritage” and partly the result of his fight against the demands of “libido”, a life force wanting nothing but physical and sexual pleasure. However, as society considers other things more important, man has to suppress the drives and urges of libido. This either leads to a conversion of libido, making it a positive force aiding man, or to its perversion when the compelling imagery of the unconscious gets the better of man and destroys him. Freud’s psychological model consists of the id (the “it”), the ego and the super-ego. The ethical and aesthetic goals, purposes and standards set by the super-ego clash with the body and sex-oriented lust of the id; man’s ego is the product of this friction. Again, and even in the middle of the professorial world of a Viennese university at the turn of this century, we find our familiar “trinity”-concept of static, thetan and GE.

And indeed - all of the above happened in the high halls of established science. So far we haven’t spoken of fringe medicine at all, quite the contrary!

Coming to the fringes now we find scientists whose work has been reluctantly, if at all, been recognized by official medicine, such as that of Christian Friedrich Samuel Hahnemann (1755-1843), founder of homeopathy, of Edward Bach (1886-1936), known through his Bach flower therapy, of Albert Abrams (1863-1924) who discovered Radionics, and of Wilhelm Reich (1897-1957).

Reich had studied under Freud but later developed his own system. He considered the healthy organism to be permeated by a bio-energy he named “orgone”, the harmonious flow of which would make for a happy and healthy life. He theorized that in the course of one’s life bio-energy was getting lumped up or locked up in form of a crust (“Panzer”) thereby engendering psychosomatic illnesses. Reich developed his ideas from the 1930’s onward, was despised by his fellow scientists, and died in isolation. (We will hear of him again in chapter 6.)

In a way, Reich had a predecessor, a real “odd man out” - the German Karl Freiherr von Reichenbach (1788-1869). After making his career and his money in chemistry, mining and mineralogy - some of his inventions like for example paraffin are still used today, and his treatise on meteorites is considered a standard - he began experimenting with 600 “sensitives”, amongst them famous people of his day, and

found in the strictest discipline of natural science, energy phenomena like people drawing “flames” out of crystals and magnets, light and color phenomena between two persons, between people and minerals, and people and plants. For over twenty years, on his own money, he broadly analyzed energy exchanges between the micro- and macrocosm. Reichenbach didn't try to prove some far-out pet theory of his - he simply made observations and attempted to explain them. His conclusion was that there must be a yet unknown “moving agent” pervading the cosmos; he called it the “od” after a Germanic word signifying “movement” and claimed that the one reason for illness was “a disturbance in the balance of the od”¹². As his findings didn't fit in with the paradigms of his day such as gravity, electricity, magnetism, light, warmth and sound, Reichenbach was met with severe animosity from high-ranking scientists of his day, some of them his former friends and admirers. He died a social outcast and a poor man. And so Reichenbach suffered a similar fate as Wilhelm Reich was to have 90 years later.

Two hundred years before Reich, Hahnemann observed that certain plants produce effects on the body which exactly parallel the symptoms of certain illnesses, and that these illnesses can be cured by using the very same plant as a medicine. A catarrh for example produces the same phenomena as cutting onions would: stuffed up nose, tears running from the eyes, etc. And indeed catarrh can be healed by turning the onion into homeopathic medicine.

“Homeopathic”, taken from Greek and literally translated, means “similar suffering”. In Latin, the scientific language of Hahnemann's days, the principle of his medical theory is stated as “*similia similibus curentur*”. Roughly translated this means “to cure an illness you must use what is similar to it”. With this, Hahnemann continued a string of thoughts already suggested three hundred years earlier by Paracelsus, but nevertheless his statement was and still is, revolutionary.

Official medicine generally advocates “allopathy”, a method of treating a disease by using remedies that produce different or contrary effects to those of the disease, thus canceling them. (“Alloion”, Greek, means “different, alien”.) Most pharmaceutical medicines work on this principle. Homeopathy was Hahnemann's alternative to allopathy. He saw illness as a suffering of “life force” (Hahnemann's own term). Life force keeps the body going so that the spirit may use it for his purposes. The material organism alone cannot keep itself up nor follow any line of action. This is done by the “dynamis”, Hahnemann's other term for “life force”. The dynamis manages the body's survival and expresses itself as emotions.

In case of disease the dynamis is upset or “out of tune”. It is not the body that is ill, it's the dynamis. This is why medicine has to work on the dynamis and not on the body. Hahnemann saw the development from health to disease and back to health as a wholly immaterial process. As the dynamis, a spiritual entity, can only be made ill by spiritual factors such as misemotions, the treatment of illnesses must therefore be done on a spiritual basis, too. To get the dynamis back in tune, the “tuning power” of a remedy is much more important than mere chemical reactions in the body.

Consequently treatment is not done by eating or drinking a herbal concoction but by thinning down plant substances at ratios from 1:100 up to 1:50.000. The plant's healing powers, thus "dynamified", are said to permeate the whole organism with their healing vibrations at the moment the medicine as much as touches the body. Healing does not occur through a mechanical transmission of particles such as atoms, but is brought about by energetic resonance's. The higher a plant has been dynamified, the more its healing power is supposed to be freed.

Speaking in scientological terms one would say that homeopathic remedies are directly addressing the Genetic Entity of the patient. Between the GEs of man and plant, sympathetic resonance is established. And as resonance is but another term for "affinity", one might say that on the basis of affinity, non-verbal communication between plant and human GEs is made to occur.

However, not all homeopathic remedies are plants - some are minerals. So perhaps one ought to speak of the demonstration of the vibratory patterns of one life form, be it plant or mineral, as influencing another, but not of an actual "healing power" inherent in the plant or mineral. Experiments have shown that such vibrations can be created artificially and when transmitted to water, will have the expected homeopathic healing effects.

In this as well as in all other therapies that are based on the recognition of life force, the role of the therapist as a person is decisive. It is his case analysis and indication of similarity of vibration of plant extracts (which often, in large concentrations, would be poisons) and symptoms and condition of the patient that is instrumental - often his recognition of the case pattern in terms of the available remedies is treatment enough.

Using this same principle of resonance, Bach flower therapy goes yet a step further. In Edward Bach's theory, man is seen to be composed of a "Higher Self" and a "Personality"; between them there is either consonance or dissonance.

The Higher Self is seen to be the seat of virtue and benevolent intentions, whereas the Personality, as a result of man's fight for survival, may be at worst a gnarled, bruised, ill-tempered, evil-minded ego who doesn't listen much to the appeals to virtue and benevolence from the next level up. Conflict between the two is therefore pre-programmed. When it occurs, the ensuing dissonance is taken out on the body in the form of psychosomatic illness.

The illness "tells" the Personality to take care, change his ways and get back in a state of consonance with his Higher Self. To guide the Personality back to wholesomeness, flowers, blossoms and plants are used. The art of the Bach healer consists of finding out which plant or blossom would correspond best to the Personality of the patient. The vibrant quality of the blossom concentrate will, if chosen correctly, help to restore a consonant vibration between Personality and Higher Self.

The interesting thing about Bach is that he doesn't use a single plant traditionally classified as a "healing plant". Healing plants or herbs directly address the somatic problems of the patient; they (in scientology terms) address the GE directly. Bach blossoms' however, work on a higher level; they address the *character* of the Personality, the set of attitudes (postulates) habitually energized without the person being aware of it. ("Circuits", in scientological terms.) Bach's system, then, can be said to address postulates, the very stuff a thetan is made of - so it operates on a very high level indeed. (However, to really cure an illness permanently, the thetan would have to recognize his or the GE's postulates and cancel them. Whether this is actually attained during Bach flower therapy along with the healing effects, would be worth investigating.)

Now to Radionics, the last development at the fringes of western medicine we are going to deal with. (The list is by no means complete!)

According to Radionic theory all life forms have specific electro-magnetic fields around them. Ultimately all fields are seen to merge with the electro-magnetic field surrounding Earth. Consequently the patient is looked at as a complex of interpenetrating energy fields. When they are in a state of disharmony, disease results.

Radionics was developed by the American physician Albert Abrams at the beginning of the 20th century. He built electronic diagnostic instruments to measure disease reactions. Further developments, particularly in the 1940s, made it possible to diagnose and treat a patient over a distance on the basis of no more than a blood sample or a lock of hair. The vibratory patterns of diseased organs and of their remedies, too, are analyzed and then tuned to each other. Detection and treatment is done across hundreds of kilometers by using the Earth field as a telepathic communication link between patient and practitioner. Radionics is not entirely instrument-bound. A senior prerequisite are the extra-sensory perception faculties (ESP) of the practitioner; Radionics is therefore, like all the others mentioned, a truly esoteric discipline. When the practitioner and his instruments are tuned to the patient, a series of diagnostic questions is asked telepathically. The cause of the disease, below that diagnosed by medical means, is detected. Then the collect vibratory rate for the healing process is determined. Sometimes homeopathic or Bach remedies are placed near the patient's blood or hair sample. The "rates" (a Radionic key word) are then transmitted to the patient.

The advantages of Radionics are that disease can be detected even before its actual outbreak and that remedies leave no side effects on the body. (Of course, all other sensible measures are recommended as well, such as keeping to a diet or seeing a chiropractor or physician.)

It is remarkable that the internal organs of the donor of the blood sample can be photographed by radionic cameras linked to the sample, again over hundreds of kilometers. Radionic cameras shoot "ether pictures" through an "ether link" resulting in photographs for example of cancerous tissue or brain tumors. In one instance when a photo was taken during an ongoing operation, it even showed the surgeon's hands and

instruments working on an organ. (In this particular case, the photographic equipment was in the USA, the operation in England.)

One is led to the possibility that Radionic photography makes GE pictures visible, the very pictures recorded by the Genetic Entity as engrams during an accident or operation and usually visualized only by the auditee in his session¹³. (As a side note: totally independent of what went on in Radionics, Franz Bardon in the 1930s actually took photos of people long dead and of places long disappeared by utilizing the ether stratum or akasha¹⁰.)

THE RESONANCE PRINCIPLE

Resonance appears to be *the* basis of the relationship between thetans and thetans, thetans and GEs, GEs and GEs and GEs and the environment. Interaction between spirit, soul, body and the physical universe can be seen to occur through consonant and dissonant energy vibrations, subjectively felt as emotions and objectively expressed as psychosomatic illnesses. The principle is that something placed close enough to a source of vibration will begin to vibrate also. Proximity (affinity) and comparable properties (reality) are necessary for a duplication of vibration, a resonance, to occur (communication). Because of the intimate connection between thetan and GE, and on the basis of such communication, vibrations in the environment that are disagreeable may cause dissonance, stress, disease.

Healing occurs by introducing harmonious vibrations, thus “de-enturbulating” the dissonance’s. This may be done by hypnosis, auditing, medicine - even by exposing the “universe” in question (in particular the GE) to the vibrations of colors and crystals.

To give some examples: Once I sat on a garden bench, an old man next to me, and after a few minutes I felt strong shoulder pains as if I had rheumatism. The old man got up and went, the pains subsided; he came back - and so did my pains. I realized that this was a resonance phenomenon between his GE and mine and indicated this to my GE, whereupon my pains went. Later I asked the son of the old man if his father suffered from rheumatism and was told that he did indeed.

Another example: research in bio-resonance has evidenced that the GE’s vibrations can be technically imitated by microwaves. Accordingly the MORA-Therapy developed 1977 in Germany by the physician Dr. Franz Morell and the engineer E. Rasche, is based on the simple concept of detecting the patient’s dissonant wave areas, feeding the wave into an electronic device which mirrors it, plays it back to the patient and thus cancels the harmful vibrations to zero.

As an aside - you may remember that microwaves were mentioned once before in the previous chapter, section “The Mind and the Brain”. There, the brain was called “an antenna”. Now, at the end of this present chapter it may have become clear that the brain as such doesn’t originate thought, emotion or action but that the operating agents are GE and thetan. However, the brain does receive actual microwave vibrations, no

matter who generated them, and so it follows that one could use microwaves deliberately to influence either a thetan or his GE via his body (brain) - not to make him sane but mad; not to heal but to cause illness. One could for example spread illnesses by satellites radiating microwaves on select parts of the planet. Radiation affects the body and this effect bounces back on the GE; some types of radiation may even affect the GE directly, as Morell has shown. Genetic mutations may occur after body and GE were exposed to radioactive radiation. So whether directly or indirectly, it's the GE and its banks which get affected, and once the information ("software") has been fiddled with, the genes ("hardware") holding this information will distribute and continue it. Thus one gets heredity. Resonance, then, is a two-faced device. It may be used either way - for healing or for deforming.

Some further and more pleasant examples on the effects of resonance: in 1966 Cleve Backster, America's foremost lie-detector expert, found out that his galvanometer would react to plants as well as humans. (A galvanometer is in principle not different from the E-meter used in auditing.) Apart from examining people with his lie-detector, Backster as well taught this skill to policemen and security agents from all over the world. In one experiment, he asked a student to kill one of two house plants, then paraded a number of students before the surviving plant and sure enough got a meter reaction when the right man entered the room.

In another experiment Backster used a polygraph which would record meter reactions on a sheet of paper. With the use of synchronized stop watches he was able to see that each of the three plants connected with the polygraph monitored his emotional reactions when he spend an exciting and slightly adventurous afternoon in New York City. At the exact moment he was getting upset about something, the plants would react on the meter¹⁴.

Another example: In 1969 Dorothy Rettallack, a biology student at the university of Denver, discovered that various types of plants such as petunias, sweet corn, squash, zinnias, and marigolds reacted to music in various ways. Exposed to rock music, some of the plants died within a fortnight, whereas those exposed to classical music, actually flowered. In a follow-up experiment plants leaned away from the speaker boxes when rock music was played to them, they leaned towards the boxes when Bach organ preludes were put on, and when Ravi Shankar played some Indian ragas on the sitar, the plants actually bent down to nearly horizontal, the nearest one almost embracing the speaker box.

In meditation, too, the principle of resonance is known and used. Aum, the mantra already mentioned in context with Maharishi's TM, is considered senior to all other mantras because it not only symbolizes but actually *is* the sound of the universe. In the beginning stages of meditation it is a spoken mantra, but the true initiate can actually hear it. In Zen literature for example, it has been likened to a deep rumbling noise or the rushing of a waterfall. Similar descriptions were given by prophets of the old and new testament (Ezekiel 3,13; Revelations 1,15). As one would compare novel experiences to what one is familiar with, a city person may not liken the Aum to the sound of rushing water but perhaps to the purring of a contented cat played through a set

of 300 watt bass speaker boxes at low volume. That's at least how I heard it myself during one particular kundalini meditation. It didn't come from anywhere in particular, it simply was *there*.

Yogananda speaks of the Aum as the "vibration of the Cosmic Motor". Hubbard seems to agree to this when he says: "*Recent researches I have done in the field of aesthetics tend to indicate that rhythm is the source of present time. The thetan is carried along both by his own desire to have, do or be and by having been overwhelmed in the distant past by a continuous minute rhythm. This is a possible explanation of a thetan's continuous presence in Present Time. Present Time, then, can be defined as a response to the continuous rhythm of the physical universe, resulting in a hereness and nowness.*" ¹⁵

Being "here and now" therefore isn't necessarily a very desirable state as it would tie one down to space (here) and time (now), a condition below the native state of a thetan which is timelessness and non-locatedness (static). Therefore those who don't unknowingly respond to this rhythm but are aware of it and can causatively tune in to it "from above", have power over anything that vibrates, be it alive or dead. According to the Indian philosopher Patanjali (200 B.C.), each time a person speaks a word or utters a mental impulse, it is transmitted by the Aum to the universal energy of akasha. In a similar vein Helena Blavatsky says - referring to the magic discipline "qabala" - that the Hebrew alphabet is an emanation of the unspeakable name of God and if used correctly will give the speaker powers paralleling those of God when he spoke "the word" at the beginning of creation (John 1, 1-3). And likewise Rudolf Steiner said that the world is but "frozen akasha", the condensed word of God".

Each sound or mental image, then, is seen as a creative act, and if performed with great purity and integrity will result in visible and even tangible effects like objects being created out of thin air ⁵. Concerning this, the great Indian musician Ravi Shankar says: "There is no dearth of beautiful stories relating how great musicians and saint-musicians (. . .) performed miracles by singing certain ragas. It is said that some could light fires or the oil lamps by singing one raga, or bring rain, melt stones, cause flowers to blossom, and attract ferocious wild animals - even snakes and tigers - to a peaceful, quiet circle in a forest around a singing musician" ⁶⁷. In fact, all language was originally creative or "evocative" insofar as the root sounds of words denote concepts rather than things and, if spoken properly, would evoke the "spirit of the thing" and thus make theta quanta assemble and bring the actual thing into physical existence. That this can be done by mantras up to this day simply means that in India this tradition hasn't disappeared yet. The power of the original Sanskrit is still alive.

That these are not merely nostalgic reminiscences of days long gone by is evidenced by Rettallack's "musical flowers" experiment quoted above. Even something as mind-boggling as the transportation of heavy building materials on the basis of resonance alone was only recently observed in Tibet, not longer than some 50 years ago, by the Swedish physician Dr. Jarl. Monks were building a wall in front of the entrance to a cave; the tricky part of the project was that the cave was behind a ledge, that the ledge was 250m up the face of a sheer cliff and that the wall was to be placed on that

ledge. There was no access to the ledge except by rope pulleys from the top of the cliff. This is how the monks got there but not their building material - hefty stone blocks of 1m side length and 1.50 m height. To get them up there they didn't use pulleys - but music!

250m away from the foot of the cliff, on the level ground, a flat bowl carved from a solid piece of rock, was positioned. Into that bowl the building blocks, hauled about by yaks, were put one by one. Again 63 m away from the bowl a quarter circle of monk musicians assembled. Thus the musicians, the bowl and the cliff were positioned in a straight line. They used the instruments common in Tibetan religious music. Behind the musicians stood four rows of priests. At a signal the musicians started off beating their drums and blowing their horns, the priests chanted their mantras, and after about four minutes the building block began to rock gently, then lifted off, hovered up in a parabolic curve and after about three further minutes settled down on the ledge. This way the monks transported about five blocks per hour.

Dr. Jarl, being a good and skeptical western scientist, wanted to make sure that he wasn't suffering from mass psychosis and had the event filmed by two separate cameras simultaneously. When he handed the films over to the British scientific society he worked for, he was told that the films were considered top secret and had to be locked away for 50 years, till 1990 ¹⁶.

Having come to the end of our little esoteric cross-country ride now, we can safely conclude that below all terminological differences there is a certainty and an awareness of a static, a thetan, a Genetic Entity and an apparently infinite potential of life energy.

Now what about physical energy? What about the physical universe with its suns, planets, galaxies and the vast spaces in between? What sort of energy keeps all this together? The next chapter will tell.

1.3 Creating a Universe

AKASHA * ETHER POWER * FROM STATIC TO MEST *
A DOWNWARD SPIRAL * UNDOING THE UNIVERSE

AKASHA

In the view of the occultists, of Bardon, Steiner, Blavatsky and of their common source, Vedic philosophy, akasha is the most subtle of substances, a mere potential and mother to the four elements. By transforming itself, akasha becomes first fire, as such produces gases (air), these on cooling off liquefy (water) and finally, through further condensation, turn into solid matter (earth).

The occultists associated something holy or god-like with akasha and its four elements, and indeed, according to the old testament, God created the world in the same alchemistic pattern - the spirit of God made first light (fire), then water and earth. Yet in Indian terms akasha simply means “universal energy” or, to use an expression of modern physics, “space-energy” (as distinguished from prana which is “life energy”).

Let's take a second look at this cosmic creation process, this time in slow motion: in its non-active, non-perceptible manifestation as a pure potential, akasha is as well termed “prakriti”. Prakriti could be translated as “potential of primal matter” and is composed of minute particles that have both quality and substance, and seem to correspond to Hubbard's theta quanta. They are subdivided in three categories called “gunas”. As long as prakriti remains a mere potential, there is no “real world” yet. Only when consciousness (purusha) acts upon prakriti, does prakriti lose its potentiality and take on actual shapes and forms. The guna particles aggregate and become manifested as fire, air, water and earth. Conscious thought acting upon the *potential* of substance brings forth *real* substance such as space, energy and matter”.

Therefore the visible, tangible universe, real as it may appear to one, is actually an illusion (maya). Consisting of tiny energy quanta, it is a continuously created thing. It's real but it isn't real. It doesn't hold any more still than a speck of oil on water would do. But interestingly enough, although a speck of oil keeps oscillating incessantly, everybody seems to know what it looks like. This is because one does not define it as a single event but as a generalization on the basis of many observations. Once again we can see that “*reality is an agreement*”.

A comparable principle is known to western physics as “superposition”. Superposition basically means that any given thing cannot merely be defined as a solid unchanging unit but only as the sum of changes it may possibly go through in the course of its existence. Dice for example, are not simply cubes with dots on them numbering one to six, they are - in terms of superposition - the sum of possible ways in which they can fall. So the universe is not looked at as a fixed thing but as a set of probabilities - it is but maya, a delusive apperency.

ETHER POWER

The following statement, though very Vedic in spirit, was made by a western scientist: “Long ago man recognized that all perceptible matter comes from a primary substance, of a tenuity beyond conception, filling all space, the Akasha or Luminiferous Ether, which is acted upon by the life-giving prana or creative force, calling into existence, in never-ending cycles, all things and phenomena. The primary substance, thrown into infinitesimal whirls of prodigious velocity, becomes gross matter; the force subsiding, the motion ceases and matter disappears, reverting to the primary substance.”¹⁸.

Nicola Tesla (1856-1943) who said this, not only claimed but experimentally proved that the force described above, known to the west since Aristoteles as the “ether”, could be tapped and used. He invented ether-powered generators that would drive cars as well as cause artificial earthquakes and thunderstorms; he found ways to transmit electricity without copper wire and pylons. In a word, he put the akasha to industrial use.

According to Tesla, if one only used the universally available cosmic energy there couldn't possibly be any energy shortage ever. Speaking in comparison, it is as if a person were sitting at the bottom of the sea with a cup in his hand, wondering how to fill it with water. Just as that person is not aware of the water surrounding him, man doesn't seem to be aware of the omnipresence of cosmic energy.

Not surprisingly, official physics of today ridicule Tesla's work, energy monopolists bought his patents and locked them away whereas the military of the USA and Russia research the matter to develop advanced weaponry. Yet despite all disinformation campaigns on the subject of Free Energy, the vision of its possibility could never be stamped out¹⁹.

Yet another western scientist surmised that space is not empty but filled with an all-pervading ether, and no actual difference can be made between space and ether. This scientist is Albert Einstein (1879-1955). He looked at space as a “somethingness” rather than a “nothingness” (speaking in Hubbard's terminology).

As a young man Einstein believed, along with contemporary science, in the existence of an ether. In the tradition of James Clark Maxwell (1860) and Isaac Newton (1690), the ether was considered to be the medium carrying light and force through the vastness of the cosmos. In 1905 Einstein dropped this idea and for eleven years, till 1916, fully negated it. This span of time during which Einstein developed his theory of relativity, proved to be crucial for the course physics was to take. The theory of relativity became the official credo; other, later statements of Einstein, particularly those concerning the ether, were ignored.

In 1934 for example, he said: “Physical space and the ether are merely different names for the same concepts; fields are physical states of space.” He went as far as stating that there was no empty space, that space is a dynamic field-medium actually producing elemental particles - not a far cry from what ancient India says about akasha²⁰.

Although established physics generally disregard Einstein’s notion of an ether, there are the occasional exceptions. Hannes Alfvén, physics Nobel prize winner of 1970, said in the 1982 meeting of Nobel laureates in Konstanz, Germany, that interstellar space is not empty as had been generally assumed, but that “99% of the universe is filled with plasma”. With that, he re-emphasized a point other Nobel prize laureates had made before him: Lenard in 1905, Stark in 1919, Compton in 1927, de Broglie in 1929, Dirac in 1933, Yukawa in 1949. The ether concept survived - cloaked as “neutrino sea”, “radiant energy”, “primary energy”, “tachyon field”, “zero-point energy”, “gravitational field energy” or “space energy”²⁰

Ether, akasha, prana, ch’i - where does this energy come from? Has it always been there? Did we, as thetans, produce this potential, or are we its product? Who is the cause of this? Whose consciousness is at work here, turning the potential for matter into actual matter? That of God?

“Quite so”, the Vedic sage would answer, “you may call it god, but to be more specific one should say it’s atman. Atman is the source of all this.”

Fair enough - but who or what is atman? Atman is you or me or anyone; it’s the Sanskrit word for thetan. Conclusion: we, all of us together, create our world - and then believe it to be real. Which is a mistake, because it isn’t. It’s maya - an illusion passing for reality.

Now, after all this Sanskrit terminology, let’s see what Hubbard has to say about the matter. We will specifically consult the “Factors”, thirty statements on how life and the universe came to be²¹.

FROM STATIC TO MEST

Factors, by dictionary definition, are “a circumstance, fact or influence that tends to produce a result”. The scientology Factors are a description of the circumstances, facts and influences resulting in a universe - any universe, be it a mental or a physical one. It took Hubbard thirty years to work them out, from 1923 till 1953.

Factor 1 says that *before* the beginning of any game there is a Cause and that the entire purpose of the Cause is the creation of effect. At this stage the Cause is merely a potential.

This statement doesn’t necessarily refer to something very grandiose that might have happened quadrillions of years ago. It refers to present time as well. You or me or indeed anyone is in a cause position most of the time, at least when we begin to

conceptualize a game. We start things. And before anything is started, we, the starters, are already there.

In order to be an actual Cause with demonstrable effects, the first thing one would have to do is putting somebody there to get things started; lacking anyone else one would of course take oneself. *In* the beginning of any game, therefore, is the decision to BE. Somebody has to *be* there, and so the Cause assumes a beingness. That's Factor 2. You have to *be* someone before you can *do* (act), and finally *have* the result of your doings. Be, do and have are the elements of any cycle of action²¹.

Now that one has assumed a beingness, one would need to actually take up a position, a point to act from. One can't lift a chair with no firm ground to stand on. So one would, as one's first action, have to have a standpoint or viewpoint. And from that viewpoint, one would extend one's theta quanta in various directions (Factors 3 and 4). In terms of the Axioms, this would mean: the static has descended and manifests himself as a thetan. He has become an "*energy-space production unit*".

The position of a viewpoint is defined by the particles emanating from it. Take a river, for example: to find its source you'd just walk upstream till you got to the point where the water particles emanate from. That's the source of the river, that's the place where he acts from - that's his "viewpoint". One couldn't possibly have a viewpoint without outflowing any particles; likewise one couldn't outflow any particles without a viewpoint. You can't see without being seen. One is the condition for the other, and vice versa.

Each particle emanating from the viewpoint serves as an orientation point for the thetan. Thus the surrounding monotony of nothingness becomes structured by an impression of dimensions. This is why Hubbard calls such particles "dimension points" theta quanta with a specific function.

As a result of flowing out particles and making coordinates, space is created (Factor 5). Example: supposing you sat in a boat out on the open sea (unstructured space) and dropped some buoys, you'd have created a two-dimensional space around you. Space therefore is defined as the dimensions created and experienced from a specific viewpoint. (A viewpoint. Please note that one might have more than one.)

So space is defined in terms of dimensions, dimensions in terms of the placing of theta quanta. This means that to the thetan, there *is no* other space than that created by his theta quanta. The rest of the world does not exist to him. The thetan is where his attention units are parked, he isn't anywhere else "as well". As a comparison, look at a flock of starlings, notice its ever-changing shape - that's the space of a thetan (supposing that each starling were a dimension point).

Some of the Factors can be read as referring to one's inner world only, yet some others definitely refer to the creation of a very real physical universe. This is how they are going to be interpreted as we carry on, because after all we wanted to see if Hubbard can offer a story of myth comparable to those we saw earlier. It begins to show already,

actually. When we add Hubbard's statement: "*The basic unit of energy is the dimension point*"⁵ to his definition of space (as consisting of dimension points), we aren't a far cry from Tesla's and Einstein's tenet that "space equals energy".

How does it go on after space has been created? Well, this space soon starts humming with activity. Between you, the viewpoint, and your dimension points are connection and interchange. You keep flowing out more and more theta quanta as you look back and forth between the various dimension points already created and thus there is communication (Factors 6 and 7). This (the intense communication between viewpoints and dimension points) brings about the phenomenon of light. Next, energy evolves, and finally, life (Factors 8, 9 and 10).

Life at this stage of its evolution would be purely spiritual. It would mean that one exists as a spiritual being who is perceptible because of his theta energy field, who participates on the playing field of mental matter, energy, space and time (mest) and as a player, creates mental image pictures, glittery and fantastical astral objects, demons and entities.

Of course, one wouldn't be alone doing so. Others, too, took a viewpoint and extended their dimension points (Factor 11), but one doesn't know of them *except through* the interchange of dimension points, through giving and receiving theta quanta (Factor 24). It is this zone where theta quanta mingle, that we call a "shared universe" and therewith, "reality". The extent of game one may have with another is proportionate to the amount of overlap one's own universe has with his (Dn Ax.113, 114).

Sounds a bit sobering, perhaps? But look, if it is true that pure spirits in their static state live in a place where there are no particles, how would they "see" each other? They wouldn't!

But they'd *know* each other. And that's an entirely different matter. Because *knowing* another occurs through mutual recognition of postulates on a level "above" quanta flows, whereas *seeing* or any other form of energy-related perception depends on particles serving as a communication medium. Without a medium there cannot be any vibration and therefore neither sensual nor telepathic communication.

A non-energized thetan exists merely as a beingness. That's the first step down from static, from potential Cause. Beingness is the result of postulates. Postulates are infinite. Particles are not. Therefore those on a static plane and those one step down (thetans identified with no more than their postulates) would *know* each other, they would notice each other's beingness, but they wouldn't *perceive* each other in any mest-related way. Thus "knowing" and "seeing" are two entirely different modes of awareness.

To recapitulate: our static is operating simultaneously on three floors by this time; firstly as a static nothingness (where he isn't operating at all, actually); secondly as a postulate or perhaps a will, a determined thought; thirdly on the level of substance,

the stuff he creates or uses to put that will into action. He produces his theta quanta, throws them out further and further, pulls them in, interchanges them with those of others, piles them up in one place, disperses them in some other. So there is motion (Factor 12). Because of the postulated solidity of theta particles, they can be combined to all sorts of forms, be they gases, fluids or solids. Thus there is matter (Factors 13 to 16). Matter at this point means the stuff the physical universe is made of. It isn't mental imagery any more. Much as mental mest is solid to a degree, the physical universe is *more* solid. It's the same stuff, but much more condensed.

A simple example: you as the Cause could postulate to be a coffee-maker (beingness), take up a viewpoint in the kitchen and start getting your bearings concerning cups and spoons and water and kettle and coffee (dimension points), thereby creating your space in the kitchen. Then you would proceed to move these shapes and forms about and combine them, and in the end you'd have a cup of coffee. Again we are talking about the cycle of action, about Be-Do-Have.

Theta quanta are no neuters. Each of them has two characteristics: the postulate and the emotion at the moment of their creation. They bear the personal stamp of their maker. Apart from that they carry all later information, for example who used them, when, and with what postulate and emotion. Indeed, theta quanta contain the complete history of the particular universe they pertain to.

A DOWNWARD SPIRAL

The remaining Factors describe what Hubbard occasionally calls the "downward spiral". The viewpoints (thetans) began to consider their creations more valuable than themselves and felt dependent on them. This is partly because many of these creations were co-creations. Thetans didn't know any longer which particle had been created by whom, therefore couldn't easily un-create them and so became terribly careful about creating anything. In the end they stopped believing that they could create at all; and thus there was scarcity and the illusion of death (Factors 17 to 26).

This is where we as thetans stand today - we are concentrated so hard on having to become better or freer or holier, on having to become different, that we forgot entirely that we actually *were* someone all along anyway, and still *are*, at this very moment. "*There is beingness, but man thinks there is only becomingness.*" (Factor 27.)

Unhappiness and the need to change only show when one has lost contact with one's "higher" immortal self. In Factors 13 and 28 suggestions are made on how to resolve the thetan's entanglement with mest: by restoring his ability to freely create and uncreate, start, change and stop any kind of theta quantum and by enabling him to admire the mest universe as a whole, each particular condition and creation and even each single theta quantum within it - because only that would un-create any unwanted condition or creation. To see it precisely *as it is* and admire it makes it go poof! and vanish. "(. .) *admiration is so strong its absence alone permits persistence.*" (Factor 13.)

As an aside - the above is actually put in practice in each auditing session, because there the mental masses one creates involuntarily are un-created by the single means of looking at them exactly as they are and “admiring them to bits”. This is an affinity-based process. Expressed in terms of resonance it means that one duplicates the exact wave pattern and actually creates it newly and voluntarily in its own time and space, a condition which in this universe leads to immediate annihilation (Ax.12, 15, 16). (This will involve recognizing and granting beingness to others who as co-creators have contributed to the masses’ existence. As we have said, this forgetting to differentiate between oneself and others as co-creators is probably the major reason why we are in a state of believing that we have to experience and suffer from so much solidity.)

To end off on the Factors - there are two more, 29 and 30, containing general philosophical statements which we do not need to take up here. But before ending off it should be said that the Factors are not necessarily equally relevant to all thetans, and that the historical development shown in them has not been suffered by all thetans in the same severity. Each thetan is different. Each thetan is at his own point in this downward spiral, or perhaps he is already in an upward spiral and on his way out. And it’s not that we all started at the same instance and went through this whole development in step with each other. Personally, I see all parts of the evolvement described in the Factors as existing simultaneously here and now. There is a perpetual coming and going of thetans of different awareness and ability, and some of them may have come to the specific universe described by the Factors from other possible universes not described by the Factors which may exist parallel to this one, or they have descended straight down from the static plane as undiluted manifestations of the Cause. (Some auditing sessions did provide evidence for this. In Sanskrit they are called “avatars”.)

Back to our initial question of “Who made the ether?” Well, if it is true that the ether, akasha, ch’i or prana are consistent with

Hubbard’s theta quanta, the answer would be that these energy fields didn’t always” exist but were created by everybody who ever participated in the mest universe game. A gigantic co-creauon !

“The MEST universe (. . .) is found to consist of a high-level agreement amongst us. (. . .) The reality of one’s own universe is poor because he is in a comatose state of agreement with the MEST universe. (. . .) (A thetan) is in good and active condition in direct ratio to the degree he can break this flow of agreement and establish his own flows and thus create his own universe. One ‘s appreciation of the MEST universe is almost uniformly the energy which one himself places upon the MEST universe, in other words his illusions. When he loses his hopes and dreams (his illusions), it is because he has lost his ability to emanate energy back at the MEST universe and is dependent upon the energy the MEST universe thrusts at him. “5

UNDOING THE UNIVERSE

Even theta quanta condensed to the solidity of physical mest are sufficiently “alive” to give and receive communication. There are many examples for this. Some people have been known to communicate with metals so intimately that they manage to bend spoons and metal bars without even touching them; animals can pre-divine avalanches and earthquakes; miners in the old days consulted mountain gnomes to find a lode and its path through the rock; desert people like the Australian aborigines have a sixth sense for underground water reservoirs; geomancers (people who perceive magnetic power spots under the ground) used to determine the sites for building the cathedrals, monasteries and chapels of medieval Europe. This has lived on in the Chinese custom of “feng shui” demanding that one consult the Earth dragon before building one’s house so as to balance the forces of yin and yang. The energy field of the landscape is to be conformed with and enhanced rather than destroyed by the position of buildings, tombs, walls and roads²².

Even natural science confirms the aliveness of “dead matter”. Around the turn of the 20th century, the great Indian scientist Sir Jagadis Chandra Bose demonstrated that metals respond to stimulation by Hertzian waves or exposure to drugs in so much the same way as organic tissue that even experts were hard put to tell the resulting curves apart. Stress and strain in the living and non-living graphically showed in the same way. Bose concluded that there is no clear borderline between the organic and the inorganic^{6,14}. In the words of Hubbard: “*Mest persists and solidifies to the degree that it is not granted life.*” (Ax. 52)

Perhaps we should briefly contemplate the implications of Hubbard’s view of the world. If all conditions of existence were indeed brought about only by irresponsibility, if matter, energy, space and time were enforced and not “natural” states, then the ultimate consequence of each thetan taking responsibility for his part of creation would be that the physical universe dissolves and that each particle returns to where it came from - to nothingness.

To facilitate digesting this it is perhaps helpful to point out that Hubbard is not the only one favoring large-scale purposes. Siddartha Gautama, the historical Buddha of 2500 years ago, set out to free “all sentient beings” from samsara, the wheel of birth and death. This intention was upheld throughout the ages by the religious leaders and teachers of India, China and Japan, amongst them the Dalai Lama who so far has reincarnated fourteen times to assist in this mission, and the Tibetan Karmapa who has continuously reincarnated sixteen times (800 years) for the same purpose.

Some readers may wonder about the time aspect of such endeavors and indeed, there are large time spans involved. Yet to the spirit there is no time as we have seen, and as one “Age of Brahma” (the life span of a whole universe) amounts to 314 trillion years by Vedic reckoning, there is obviously time in abundance and no reason to get fidgety⁶. (One “trillion”, in the numerical system of the USA and Canada used in this book, is a 1 followed by 12 zeroes.)

1.4 God and the Infinite

ATHEISM * MONOTHEISM * STATIC AND DYNAMIC * TWO BASIC RIGHTS

In many cultures three views regarding the nature of god co-exist side by side - a polytheistic one, where many gods are seen to govern different aspects of life, a monotheistic one, where the One God is considered the single source of influence on the life of man, and an atheistic one, where god is not personified but considered a state one may experience. (Atheism, much as it denies the existence of a god-person, is not irreligious, though witness Buddhism.)

Take Christianity as an example - there the priesthood asserts the unquestionable dominance of the One God (monotheism), yet simultaneously you find people preferring to pray to Jesus and even more to the Virgin Mary and their local saints (because a local saint with healing powers seems a safer bet than an abstract God - which is polytheism), and again simultaneously you find the Christian mystic who after experiencing a god-state in his “unio mystica”, considers god beyond description (atheism), is therefore deemed a heretic by the priesthood and dutifully burnt at the stake.

Similarly Hinduism and Buddhism, both essentially atheistic, abound in demon cults and half-gods (polytheism). Yet they don't go as far as considering a single deity to govern man's fate entirely (monotheism).

In the long chapter on “Soul and Body” we encountered various psychological models - that of the German white magician Franz Bardon, of the Hawaiian Hunas, of Hinduism and Buddhism, and last but not least that of Hubbard - all of them atheistic! We didn't come across a single monotheistic one like Judaism, Christianity and Islam. This omission obviously calls for some further investigation into the subject. So we will briefly summarize what we know already on the subject of atheism, then add some thoughts on monotheism and all along draw comparisons with Hubbard's teachings.

ATHEISM

Franz Bardon has the concept of an ever so subtle stratum of “akasha” (which he actually refers to as god), manifesting itself individually as man's immortal spirit or “I”. Akasha forms the “mental body” of man, his most subtle level of existence. On a grosser plane, there is the “astral body” and further down, the physical body. These three bodies are connected by “mental stuff”.

Likewise the Hunas who see the infinite aspect of man (higher self) as tied to the game of life (middle self), and identified with body and GE (lower self). Communication between these three bodies occurs through “shadow stuff” (mana) and

postulates. Man's middle self appears to hang in a web of tiny invisible lines connecting him to objects, events and people of his past, present and future; simultaneously, above the level of mana, his higher self is interconnected with all other infinite beings - an "overlapping as infinities" as we said of thetans in their static state.

Further parallels to this "trinity system" appear in the Vedas, the source of Hinduism and Buddhism. In Hinduism, above all worldly things stands "atman", the immortal spirit of man. Part of atman is identified with body, mind and ego and so lives in the world of duality. This aspect of atman is called "jiva". Atman is the source of thought; jiva identifies with thought. Jiva thinks he *is* his mind; atman is *above* the level of mind. Atman corresponds to Hubbard's static, the unmanifested potential of a thetan; jiva would compare to the thetan actualizing himself as beingness and energy pulsations.

Atman is but a manifestation of "brahman", the absolute, the infinity beyond thought, language or imagery. Brahman, in Hubbard's terms, would be the "co-existence of static" (Ax. 25), a "nothingness with a quality, a potential" ¹.

In order to "attain nirvana" and make atman merge with brahman (make the thetan return to static), jiva, the urge for "ego", is obviously in the way and needs to be overcome. Now does this mean that at the point of enlightenment (samadhi) one gets snuffed out like a candle and "becomes one" with some huge anonymous nothing? It doesn't.

Of the relationship between "individual static" (atman) and "general static" (brahman), the 7th century Indian philosopher Shankara said: "There must be an existence, a reality, which perceives the ego-sense and its coverings and is also aware of the void which is their absence. (. . .) He who experiences is conscious of himself. Without an experiencer, there can be no self-consciousness. The atman is its own witness, since it is conscious of itself. The atman is no other than brahman." ²³ Which is to say that thetan and static are of the same quality, they are "sat-chitananda", the absolute joy (ananda) of absolute awareness (chit) and absolute beingness (sat).

The following quotation wraps this up very beautifully. If one replaced the word "being" by "static" it would sound like a lecture on Hubbard's axioms, yet in fact the writer is Maharishi Mahesh Yogi: "The basis of thought-energy we call the state of Being. Thus, Being and the Absolute are synonymous. (. . .) Underneath the subtlest layer of all that exists in the relative field is the abstract, absolute field of pure Being which is unmanifested and transcendental. It is neither mana nor energy. It is pure Being, the state of pure existence. (. . .) Existence is abstract; that which exists is concrete. (. . .) although the nature of karma and the nature of Being are incompatible, it is possible (. . .) for a man to live in the field of action and yet to live simultaneously a life of eternal freedom in bliss-consciousness of absolute Being. It is possible for man to act with full interest in the world and yet to live simultaneously in God-consciousness, thereby uniting the values of absolute and relative existence." "When the conscious mind transcends the subtlest level of thought, it transcends the subtlest state of relative

experience and arrives at the transcendental Being, the state of pure consciousness or self awareness.”²⁴

So according to Maharishi and Shankara we aren't "all one" on the level of the absolute, of static. Hubbard would agree. In characteristic terseness he puts it this way: "A *thetan* (i.e. static) is *simply you before you mocked yourself up.*" In plain English this means that what you appear to be is way below of what you really are. And regarding "one-ness" and "being one with the universe", Hubbard says: *People have had the idea that there was a main body of theta and everybody became one when you got to the top of the emotional tone scale. Fortunately that isn't true. But you go down tone scale and everybody becomes one. And the oneness is mest. There is no individuality whatsoever in mest. One of the control mechanisms which has been used on thetans is that when they rise in potential they are led to believe themselves one with the universe. This is distinctly untrue. Thetans are individuals. They do not as they rise up the scale merge with other individualities. I*

So apparently we are not one big static soup. The thetan, aware of being aware, is always himself - even when he has left his "ego" behind. Now what's the point? What's this static up to? "The creation of effect", says Hubbard (Fac. 1) - but of what effect? Hinduism coolly answers that all individual atmans taken together, as they play their games and create the illusion of a "real world" (*maya*), are but brahman playing with himself ("*lila*"). This quite surprisingly corresponds to Hubbard's Axiom 39, again put rather tersely: *Life poses problems for its own solution.*

Now if the ultimate truth is a static (Ax. 35) and if the game of life is played for the sole purpose of playing a game - what sense does it all make then . . .? (This really taxes one's havingness, doesn't it?)

And now to another form of atheism, to Buddhism - as its fundamentals are the Vedas we find familiar principles if only with some difference in terminology. Buddhism, being rather tightlipped compared to flowery and exuberant Hinduism, doesn't speak of atman and brahman or of attaining union with god, in fact one generally doesn't speak about what cannot be spoken about. For example when one wakes up to one's "true Buddha nature", one simply finds emptiness (*shunyata*). And one cannot actually "attain" one's Buddha-nature as one has it anyway; one can only wake up to it. This is called "bodhi", "awakening". The term "Buddha" refers to this experience - a Buddha is an "awakened one".

Yet despite all attempts of Buddha to keep it simple, various differentiation's were made and so we do find our "trinity" again. The primal emptiness (*shunyata*) came to be subdivided into three spiritual bodies, the highest one denoting absolute knowingness (*dharmakaya*), the middle one denoting the joy of realizing absolute truth (*sambhogakaya*), the lowest one denoting the application of truth and ethics in the world (*nirmanakaya*).

Tibetan medical philosophy, a Buddhist discipline, is as well built around the idea of a "trinity". Highest is "chi", a principle beyond space and time (static) and constituting the potential for all that might ever be, the second "shara", the will to create and form, the third "badgan", the substance which is to be formed. The

combination of chi, shara and badgan is the prerequisite for life - now a familiar formula to us.²⁵

MONOTHEISM

Catholicism and Islam, rooted in the Old Testament, can be considered variations of yet an older monotheistic religion Judaism. Both the New Testament and the Koran are indebted to the Talmud²⁶. They agree on the One God who is not so much a principle, a nameless power potential like brahman, but a definite personality and quite a demanding one, too, who doesn't permit any other gods next to him, transmits moral codes through his prophets, punishes and disciplines the believer and imposes trials on him to test his faith. Certainly the true name of the Jewish god, JHVH, is both unspeakable and ungraspable, yet despite that plenty of policies emanate from him, governing the life of the believer in all detail. So even in monotheism, the appearance of god is manifold - there is the God of the Genesis who created the world, the God of Moses who made the Israelites his chosen people, the wrathful God of the prophets - One God each time, certainly, but is it really the same one?

The three monotheism's agree further in that they believe in a system of relay points between God and man, running from God to an archangel who tells a prophet what God wishes to communicate to the people; after the prophet's death, a priesthood takes over from him to interpret God's word to the parish. Many relay points, obviously.

Whereas Hinduism and Buddhism permit realization of one's true spiritual nature through one's own efforts - for example by practicing yoga and meditation - monotheism teaches that there is a fundamental duality between man and God which is impossible to bridge by the religious seeker, because there is one ingredient he cannot do anything about, and that is the "grace of God". The grace of God ("bechinam" in Hebrew) comes when it comes, one cannot influence its coming.

Yet despite all dogma and doctrine, free thinkers and mystics always and against all the rules found ways to experience god and they *didn't* find a specific personality called "One God in Heaven". Very dangerous people, indeed (from the viewpoint of the priesthood). In Judaism, these were the Qabalists, in Islam, the Persian Sufis. (Right across the border from Persia is India a mere coincidence?) By their practices these mystics managed to transcend the apparent duality between man and god and arrive at a certainty of "being in god" - the "mystical union" so hard worked towards by medieval Christian hermits, too.

The mystic with the longest-lasting impact is of course Jesus Christ himself. Let's not speculate whether he really was a historical personality, whether he studied with the Essenes who in turn received their knowledge from Buddhist monks, sent to the Middle East around 250 B.C. by the emperor Akosha, or whether "Jesus Christ" merely denotes a state of consciousness. No matter if the New Testament is a factual account or a grand metaphor, what counts is how it differs from the Old Testament, from Judaism, Catholicism and Islam. There is a distinctly Buddhist flavor to some of Jesus' words, a bafflingly atheist touch. Just listen: "Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests;

but the Son of man has nowhere to lay his head” (Mt 8.20). “Nowhere” - is that the “emptiness” (shunyata) one realizes after bodhi, one’s awakening? Or take this one: “Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father in me” (Jn 14.11). Replacing “Father” with “static” or “dharmakaya” would make this sound rather buddhistic indeed, definitely not old-testamentarian! Or perhaps this one: “I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but by me” (Jn 14.6). Well, quite! If Christ-consciousness is a state, then there is no other way to attain one’s awakening but to go through it (through the *state*, not through the *person* of Christ) - a thought echoed by the 14th century Christian mystic Meister Eckhart who says: “Seeing God is seeing like God”, who speaks of God as “luther nicht” (sheer nothingness) and who sees himself unable to describe his unio mystica except by Zen paradoxes. Very heretical indeed!

STATIC AND DYNAMIC

To summarize: mystics east and west agree on a static state which, in itself unmoving, causes dynamic motion and so brings about the ups and downs of life. Although this state is usually referred to as “god” in western literature (on the background of

2000 years of Catholicism) it may not necessarily be identical with the deity mentioned in the Old Testament.

We saw before that god, brahman or dharmakaya represent a vast supra-individual one-ness, the “co-existence of static”. To the degree that one “falls away” from static and enters the realm of affinity, reality and communication, one becomes a confused and forlorn spirit. *“Affinity is a scale of attitudes which falls away from the co-existence of static, through the interposition’s of distance and energy, to create identity, down to close proximity but mystery.*

(Explanation: By the practice of Beingness and the refusal to Be individuation progresses from the Knowingness of complete identification down through the introduction of more and more distance and less and less duplication (. . .) to Not-Knowingness (Mystery).” (Ax. 25)

These lines are yet another formulation of the “downward spiral” of the Factors. For practical reasons, Hubbard structured the game “below static” to comprise **eight dynamics**, thus subdividing life into eight playing fields of differing magnitude and responsibility. As we’ll need this concept further on in this book, we’ll have to sketch it briefly.

Read from the top down, the eight dynamics describe the evolution of a universe and so parallel the Factors. The static, an infinite potential, primarily manifests itself as thought. He can create, alter and uncreate thought. This is the most subtle of dynamic actions one could possibly undertake; it’s the 8th dynamic. It results in “beingness”, in the thought-being we call thetan (Ax. 1, 2,11).

I, the thinker, being the cause of my own thoughts, am outside them. I am a static outside all dynamics. By forming postulates and concepts (thoughts) I create my game, thus drop out from being a “pure” static and become a thought being, a thetan. I am in fact both - at least as long as I do not forget (Dn Ax. 1, 2; Ax. 25).

Next, desiring to create visible effects, I produce theta quanta and thereby mental mest (7th dynamic). Through interaction with a number of other thetans’ co-creations are made. When the question “Who has created what?” isn’t answered due to irresponsibility, theta quanta will continue to be misowned and mental (or “astral”) creations will accumulate and condense. By further agreement and partly out of helplessness their solidification is driven further and further, eventually resulting in physical mest (6th dynamic). Combining spiritual entities such as the GE and the thetan (7th dynamic) with material objects such as bodies (6th dynamic), we get organic life (5th dynamic) which is organized on the 4th dynamic as large populations of different species and on the 3rd dynamic as smaller subgroups within a species. In order to physically perpetuate the race into the future, bodies get together and create new bodies (2nd dynamic); these usually start out as egocentric little individuals (1st dynamic), before they begin to work their way upwards again, towards infinity.

Each dynamic is modified by two considerations - ethics and aesthetics. Ethics means as much as “making the right choice within a given context”, thus finding “optimum solutions” which ideally would satisfy all parties concerned (Dn Ax. 193). The order resulting from such a solution will be optimum within the context in question and therefore appear aesthetical. Some compositions of Bach and Mozart, some paintings of Durer and Rembrandt, some Indian, Japanese or African sculptures consist of a series of right choices. If you’d change one note or one dab of paint, the result would be less convincing than the original. Which proves that ethics (right choices made within a given context) lead to aesthetics. One follows from the other.

As these two modifying considerations have dynamic strength of their own, Hubbard termed them “9th dynamic” for aesthetics and “10th dynamic” for ethics’.

TWO BASIC RIGHTS

Now what choice is a “right” choice? If one were to measure choices solely by the satisfaction or dissatisfaction it produces in the participants of a specific game, and given that a) most games (except sports) have no rules and b) satisfaction and dissatisfaction aren’t always enlightened in character but c) most commonly based on self-righteousness and pigheadedness, the chances are fabulous that one, on this background, might arrive at some rather pitiful “optimum solutions” - self-righteous, moralistic and shortsighted ones which will prove fatal in the future and make one wade knee-deep in bad karma. Certainly not optimum for anyone, not even the decision makers.

So by what standards can ethical rightness be measured? Hubbard formulated them as “Two Rights of a Thetan”: 1. the Right to Self-Determinism, and 2. the Right to Leave a Game²⁷.

Joining a game never is a problem but leaving one quite often is ! Therefore any thought or action taking away one’s self-determinism and one’s freedom to leave a game, would have to be considered strictly non-ethical. The way back to Cause, to static, must not be obstructed for anyone under any circumstances. And as we all meet on the static plane, each thought counts, of everyone - not our actions only! Each of us, by thinking thoughts, contributes to the flavor of the game we are all players in.

If we wanted to have an ethical and therefore aesthetic game, one that is easy to enter, easy to play, and easy to leave, we would have to make sure that all postulates within that game were aligned with the Two Rights.

CHAPTER 2

Scientology Science or Science Fiction?

2.1 Auditing Compared to Traditional Practices

MEDITATION AND AUDITING * SHAMANISM AND DIANETICS *
ON ENERGY TRANSFORMATION AND UN-CREATION

MEDITATION AND AUDITING

Philosophically, Hinduism, Buddhism and scientology seem quite comparable. But in practical terms, do they have anything in common, too? Meditation practitioners for example often don't find out anything about their past lives and the karmic reasons for their present life; they don't always recognize the contents of the evil fumes they burn up by the light of their mantras. In the self-realization systems of Yogananda and Maharishi this is no shortcoming; it simply isn't considered necessary - in auditing, however, one couldn't do without seeing the picture exactly as it is, with sight, sound, smell, own motion, motions of everybody else, exact time, place, form and sequence of events. Seeing it as it is is *the* prerequisite to dissolving the unwanted emotional energy in it.

It is known in both disciplines that the more attention one gives to a picture the more energy is fed to it and the more it is blown up. In auditing this is desirable as one literally restimulates the hell out of a picture till the auditee has looked at it in all respects, has gone through all painful dramatizations connected with it, found out that he can't be frightened by it and finally laughs out it. In meditation, blowing up pictures to full size is unwanted as it will distract the meditating person from his mantra. He is supposed to stay with his mantra and keep producing a safe loving space within which the picture will melt like a wax doll of the devil in front of an electric fire.

One might suspect that the mantra serves as a cushion keeping one from directly facing the pictures from one's bank the way it's done in auditing; on the other hand one might defend mantra meditation by saying that without the mantra the bank wouldn't be activated at all - either way, auditing as well as meditation work on the principle of havingness. Havingness, to repeat, is the ability to have what comes to your senses or your mind, without trying to run away from it or act against it. You just "have" what's happening; like any good surfer, you go *with* the wave instead of against it. Like any other ability, havingness is not either "there" or "not there" but rather more or less there. Meditation and auditing both enhance havingness. They increase one's havingness with respect to one's inner world. And so, despite all methodical differences the final result seems the same: both practitioners wind up being able to let mental masses go up in smoke simply by noticing them.

This is an affinity process. As you don't resist these energy masses but voluntarily tune in to them and causatively duplicate their resonance band, they dissolve. It works purely by duplication of vibration "*Bringing the static to create a perfect duplicate causes the vanishment of any existence or part thereof*" (Ax. 20) All you need is Love.

Although the results may look the same on the outside one question remains, and from the viewpoint of an auditor it's a very important one indeed: what role do postulates play in meditation? In auditing, a process is considered complete as soon as the postulate in the incident has been found, as it is through this postulate that the thetan compulsively re-creates misemotions and body pains. Once a postulate is pulled up from the dark depth of unknowingness into the bright light of knowingness, the thetan will not fall into its trap any longer. With the postulate found and known, the aberration will be gone- for good, because it's thought that creates unwanted habits and psychosomatic symptoms. Thought precedes everything.

During mantra meditation one builds up affinity on an ever-expanding scale and dissolves whatever may come one's way. Are postulates part of this process, too? Does one become aware of them, see them for what they are and cancel them? (As all thetans "overlap" on the 8th dynamic through the infinity of their thoughts, canceling individual non-survival and non-ethical postulates would naturally affect and change general thought vectors. Therefore the question posed above is of supreme importance; particularly in view of what you are going to read in chapters 3 to 6.)

SHAMANISM AND DIANETICS

All healing systems we have referred to prefer the thetan "out" in order to facilitate healing. The Huna, the hypnotherapist, they want direct contact with the GE; from their viewpoint, the thetan is only in the way. In auditing, however, the thetan is expected to stay *in* the session and be part of the process. It is he himself who has to look at the pictures, resolve them and take responsibility for having contributed to a non-optimum physical or emotional condition.

Dianetic-style auditing in particular brings thetan and GE in touch with each other. Dianetics works "dia nous" - "through the mind", not through by-passing the mind and opening a direct communication channel between the practitioner and the patient's GE.

Ch'i therapies, acupuncture and shamanic healing aren't intended to make the patient aware of how he is himself responsible for his troubles. Much as during a Ch'i healing process engrams

are opened and long-suppressed grief is discharged, the underlying incidents are usually not worked on until *all* charge is erased and the postulate found (making it likely that the mental masses and psychosomatic illnesses just gone will return one day).

Hubbard considers a high emotional tone level to be *the* prerequisite for sane interaction between thetans, between thetans and demon entities, thetans and GEs. It is a basic tenet in Scientology and Dianetics that the chronic position of a person on the emotional tone scale allows precise predictions regarding that person's future sanity and health. Therefore Hubbard defines auditing ("processing") thus: *"Anything which raises a person's (emotional) tone can be considered legitimate processing. Processing achieves permanent rises in tone."* ²

A healer doesn't address so much the thetan but the body (or the GE, to be precise); an auditor in contrast addresses the thetan yet doesn't do anything for him or his body but rather aids the auditee to do something for himself. Seen this way, shamanic techniques wouldn't be considered "processing" in the definition of Hubbard - a conclusion which in no way should belittle the achievements of shamans, healers and hypnotherapists. Their results validate their work just as an auditor's results validates his. It all depends on one's purpose - the healer wants to heal a suffering person as fast as he can; the auditor wants the thetan to recognize his role in the interplay between himself and telepathic messages from other thetans, demon entities and the GE and eventually raise his responsibility to a point where he becomes independent of doctors, priests, psychologists, shamans, healers - and auditors, too!

ON ENERGY TRANSFORMATION AND UN-CREATION

The Caucasian mystic Gurdjieff (1873-1949) defined the purpose of mysticism as transforming energy and thus gaining relevant insights and powers²⁸. His definition seems widely applicable - witness those Tibetan monks lifting stones with their music, those occultists and shamans evoking nature's "elemental spirits", those yogis mastering the heat of glowing coal, the cold of Himalayan winters and (by levitating) the laws of gravity.

As soon as one mentions "occult energy transformations" one is automatically into the subject of "siddhis" - spiritual powers. In the East faquirs and sadhus make a show of their siddhis; usually they are poor people making their living by turning themselves into a circus show. This, however, is not to be mixed up with the siddhis one begins to possess as a natural side effect of one's honest spiritual purification. (A sincere yogi would never show off!)

Nevertheless, even without any particular spiritual cleansing one can learn to master certain magic tricks making one appear spiritually advanced. Some examples in Yogananda's "Autobiography" show how a secret mantra, given to an unworthy individual, can not only evoke considerable magic powers in that individual but as well make him wreak equally serious damage to his environment! For this reason certain mantras are kept confidential and handed from guru to chela (disciple) for generations. Quite apart from such precautions their secret is as well self-contained, because reading them off a piece of paper doesn't make them work - it takes knowing their correct

pronunciation at the right time of day or night and under the proper astrological constellation before they will produce the desired effect²⁹.

Yogic education on this rather practical level of performance shares common elements with shamanism; firstly, an initiation where one is supposed to go to heaven to speak with divinities and then go to hell to speak with devils; secondly, healing people and saving them from near-death by wrenching them off the claws of demons; third, walking on fire²⁹.

Practically all shaman healing is done through the GE. Once I had the opportunity to watch an African voodoo healer; he held a chicken in front of an ill person, made the demon creating the

illness go into the chicken, then killed the chicken and had the dying chicken's GE take the person's demon with him. This is engram healing affected through establishing resonance between two GEs. ("Voodoo", by the way, means "spirit".)

Hypnosis works directly from hypnotist to GE, Bach blossom healing, homeopathy, you name it - they are all based on energy transformation. Even "channeling", the modern-day equivalent of the old time trance medium contacting the dead, works that way; even there the Genetic Entity is used! It serves as a "sounding board to the telepathic impulses from some entity or thetan, its voice circuits permit the message not only to be worded but even pronounced with mannerisms typical of the defunct beloved - whilst the medium's thetan is gone, left the body, out to lunch, doesn't know a thing when the session is over. Energy transformation again.

For all of this - evocation, transformation, levitation, divination, harmonization, necromancy - energies like akasha, prana or ch'i are used. They are considered pre-existing. They are 'already there', one uses them as one needs them. Once I had a major argument with a Transcendental Meditation teacher about this; he flatly refused to accept Hubbard's thesis that the thetan, on being restimulated, each time newly re-creates his mental image pictures along with their attitudes, emotions, sensations and pains. To him these pictures, once created, become part of the akasha and aren't literally re-created, rather they are "plucked off the akasha", as it were. This of course I couldn't accept; the battle went on to a standstill since neither of us could prove his point convincingly.

From this I learned that there seems to be a fundamental difference between Hubbard's view of creation and that of some older schools of thought, in that Hubbard does not speak of energy transformation but maintains that the thetan creates mental mest newly each time he puts attention on something, and that he un-creates it immediately afterwards unless the creation is done in a low tone level and based on a bum postulate which of course would make that creation persist. But even though, it can be undone; each auditing session proves this - even to the point of restoring each theta quantum to its rightful owner. This experience (an esoteric experience by all standards) which in a way confirms Hubbard's assumption about the creation and un-creation of mental mest, is highly significant insofar as Hubbard's entire "universal un-creation

game” is founded on it. Shifting energy from one state to the other is a different game altogether. Knowing this one may understand why Hubbard was on bad terms with “the wisdom of the East”. Just to remind you of what he said about “present time being the result of the thetan responding to the rhythm of the universe” - that’s just as true as it could be dangerous if one fell for the siddhis that would go along with smoothly tuning in to that rhythm for the sole purpose of showing off.

We saw earlier that Hubbard, just as clearly as he advocates undoing and un-creating, warns against “becoming one with the universe”. Falling in love with energy transformation - because of the powers it gives one - might actually draw the thetan *into* the mest universe rather than out of it. The following quotation would have to be understood in this context, I believe: *“India and ‘join Nirvana’ has given us ‘techniques’ which are guaranteed to glue a thetan to a body as though riveted and tied with iron bands. So beware of mysticism and its techniques and yogism. Your hardworking author has been over the jumps and through the hoops of more mysticism than is ever suspected on the ground where mysticism first hit Earth - India, and I can guarantee you that these practices and hopes are a sort of theta trap to keep men in their bodies, in apathy, ill and tied to superstition.”* ⁸

Sounds a bit harsh perhaps, but there might be some truth to it, too. It might be a good idea to go back to this quotation and reevaluate it after having gone through this book as far as chapter 5.

2.2 Hubbard's "Space Opera"

SCIENCE FICTION * SCIENTIFIC FUNDAMENTALS *
SCIENCE VERSUS MYTHOLOGY * THE AXIOMS *
THE ELECTROPSYCHOMETER (E-METER) * FACT OR FICTION? *

SCIENCE FICTION

So far, this book was written on a fairly conservative note; hopefully it didn't contain too much one could disagree with. Demon entities, the Genetic Entity, life force, ghosts, theta quanta, the thetan and his abilities - "unscientific" as all of this may appear, it has yet been experienced by too many people throughout too many millennia as to be simply brushed off. From chapter 3 on we'll change gear, though, and the book in front of you will turn positively incredible and sufficiently ridiculous as to rightfully deserve being called "unscientific". Because what you are going to read sounds pretty much like a blend of "The Hitch Hiker's Guide to the Galaxy", the "Lensman Series" and the film "Star Wars", with a bit of "Lord of the Rings" thrown in.

However - what's scientific and what isn't? We'll have to find an answer to this, else we cannot stamp Hubbard to be "a mere science fiction writer who fell prey to his own fantasies and turned into a religious guru" without being rather rash and supercilious ourselves. Sure enough, Hubbard was a science fiction writer and successfully so; after all he financed his young years and his research that way. He may not have churned out "literature" but he was a professional in the sense that he made his money by writing. He calls Robert Heinlein his "dear friend" and between 1940 and 1950, along with Asimov, wrote for the Magazine "Astounding Science Fiction" ³¹. Several hundred titles appeared under Hubbard's various pen names.

Do Hubbard and his fellow writers suffer from overly developed and slightly bizarre imagination, borderlining the paranoid, or do they draw from a common well? Perhaps they elaborate dull memories of actual events and conveniently put them into the future, memories that are concealed by screens of improbability? Yet just because something is improbable doesn't mean to say that it never occurred in the past or won't ever occur in the future. Improbability is too weak an argument as to call anything "merely fictitious" or "unscientific".

Science fiction started with Edgar Allen Poe and Jules Verne around the time of the Industrial Revolution, a time when the environment changed radically and became factory-oriented instead of agricultural, when unheard-of substances were discovered and machines invented that made transport and communication breathtakingly fast - in short, a time likely to restimulate earlier similar times on this planet or others. Astronomy explored outer space, the military invented horrific killing machines, the restimulation caused thereby became more and more ubiquitous and severe - and eventually found its articulation in a new genre of literature, a genre that reached its peak during the 1940s in the "golden age of science fiction".

Speaking as an auditor I can say with absolute certainty that any part of a book, any scene in a film that a person remembers well and feels fascinated or horrified by, must have touched a charged area in a past life of that person. When you audit and the auditee, on the question: "Is there an earlier similar incident?", comes up with something from times past or other worlds and then says: "well, I only read that in a book the other day", you can be sure that below that is a real incident, an incident the auditee (or one of his entities) experienced himself, and that this incident when found and discharged, will cause the disappearance of the auditee's difficulties and a major change in his life.

Conclusion: the fact that science fiction has such an enormous audience means that it presses the right "buttons" in people and evokes their memories - not enough for full recall yet sufficient for them to be either fascinated or horrified. (The reverse is true as well, by the way: a person with no charge on his time track doesn't particularly respond to such buttons. He'd know anyway how it *really* was.)

SCIENTIFIC FUNDAMENTALS

Let's begin this section with a rather surprising little quotation: Hubbard, as an engineer, has tackled the problem of the mind from the scientific method. Basically, that method is: 1. Gather all available data that is, or appears to be, relevant. 2. From the data, form a hypothesis. 3. On the basis of the hypothesis, make a prediction. 4. Experiment to check the validity of the prediction. 5. Vary the experiments, and collect more data. 6. When the new theory breaks down, take the now collected data and formulate a new hypothesis. 7. Go back to step 3."

This is taken from the editor's introduction to the May 1950 issue of the magazine "Astounding Science Fiction"; the editor was John W. Campbell. He goes on to say: "Most readers of this magazine are fully accustomed to that method; to those who are not, the above described process is *not* circular; it is spiral. Each turn of the spiral sweeps in more and more territory. It is the turning of precisely such a spiral process that led from Dalton's early atomic hypothesis to Bohr's original theory of atomic structure, to present quantum-mechanical analysis of nuclear forces. It has led to aircraft that fly, automobiles that work, and radio that covers the planet.

It is also the logical process that led to the present theories of dianetics.

Now there is an interesting thing about a scientific theory; the scientist always rather vaguely hopes the theory he is working with is true, but knows that it *does not need to be*. A scientific theory is a useful tool; it need not be true so long as it is useful. Dalton's theory implied atoms were hard little balls; it was incorrect, but it advanced chemistry. Therefore it was a good theory. The present theories of dianetics may or may not be true; that's unimportant, *provided the techniques described actually work*. (. . .) There is one, and only one scientific argument with, for or against any scientific theory: experimental evidence. (. . .) The only scientific method of examination is to have many

scattered workers repeat Hubbard's experiments, using precisely the methods Hubbard specifies, and record results."

Campbell's demand, expressed in the last sentence, has actually been complied with a good forty years later. Many scattered workers do repeat Hubbard's experiments, in fact in each auditing session - because it is the auditing session which serves as a testing ground for the truth or untruth of the hypothesis the auditor works on.

What hypothesis does the auditor form, why and how? Simple. He wants to solve his auditee's case problem and doesn't do so by sheer trial and error but by analyzing the data given by the auditee, deducting from them a hypothesis, devising a step-by-step session approach (the "experiment") and predicting a certain result for each step. Should a given step not obtain the result predicted, another step has to be devised; if this one doesn't work either, the auditor will have to go back a step and form a new hypothesis on the case.

In this he doesn't start from scratch but works from a general theory, from a basis of experiences and agreements regarding certain phenomena and their cause compiled by earlier auditors in other words, he draws from Hubbard's model of the mind, i.e. all the stuff we went through in the first chapter. This model is most concisely expressed in the "Axioms of Scientology" already quoted here and there²¹.

About the axioms we'll speak in a moment; let's first simplify and summarize what has been said about "science" so far: *science permits prediction*. That is it in a nutshell. Anyone observing and gathering phenomena, analyzing them, finding common denominators, rules and laws and on that basis predicting further and perhaps even yet unknown phenomena, is a

scientist- Science permits prediction. You couldn't make a cup of coffee if you didn't take for granted that a gas flame heats water, that coffee powder and sugar dissolve in water, that a cup will hold liquids without melting - and only because you consider all these phenomena and the rules and laws pertaining to them can you safely predict that a cup of coffee will be served within the next few minutes. Very strictly speaking, anyone making a cup of coffee is a scientist.

A useful and reliable scientific model explains a maximum of phenomena by means of a minimum of hypotheses and theories. A "theory" is established when from a senior and general hypothesis lesser and more specific hypothesis can be deducted. When a theory has been sufficiently consolidated by observation and experiment, when rules and laws have emerged and when these rules and laws tie in with the rules and laws of other theories, forming one comprehensive whole, we have arrived at a scientific model. The ideal scientific model would be large enough to comprise all phenomena in the macrocosm of astronomy and the microcosm of molecular biology and explain them without contradiction.

SCIENCE VERSUS MYTHOLOGY

In one of his essays the famous physicist and astronomer Stephen Hawking agrees that a theory only serves to explain the phenomena we observe, that a good theory explains a large number of phenomena and even predicts yet unknown phenomena; then he adds the intriguing comment that it makes no sense to ask if a particular theory coincides with reality - because one doesn't always know *what* reality it is supposed to refer to! ³²

This means basically that science builds a world of its own by its own observations, agreements on observations, explanations of observations and agreements on explanations - and with a swift and unexpected turn we are right back to Hubbard's "*Reality is the agreement upon perceptions and data in the physical universe*" (Dn Ax. 113).

Now as it seems that in order to call an activity "scientific", all it takes is a) having an all-explaining theoretical model and b) predicting results on its basis, one might well call yoga, meditation, shamanism and indeed scientology, too, scientific! One set of myths (that of western science) is as good as the other (that of the yogi in his cave) as long as within a circumscribed universe results can be predicted and actually obtained. "Truth" or "untruth" is wholly beside the point.

It may seem peculiar to use the expression "myth" in context with science - but look at the many things science only assumes or purports to know but in fact has no explanation for! For example the "Big Bang", widely proclaimed by the media to mark the beginning of the universe. But not even its date is firmly agreed on - supposedly it happened somewhere in the rather wide time span between 5 and 15 billion years ago (10 to the power of 9) - let alone if it really occurred. Insiders to astronomy have heatedly debated it; for example Sir Fred Hoyle in 1946 suggested an alternative, the "Steady State Theory", whereby the cosmos is seen as one huge energy field which every now and then creates out of its particles, new galaxies (akasha again!). And it's existed not for a mere 5 billion years only but for a good thousand billion years ! (They are getting closer to the Hindu idea of cosmic time cycles . . .)

There are more examples and one doesn't even have to go far to find them. How come clouds carrying millions of tons of water stay aloft? How come the droplets in them freeze only at minus 40 degrees Celsius and not at the normal freezing point of zero degrees? Where does the water go after the gigantic cloud banks of a cyclone have dissolved? Meteorology doesn't know. Or take the ozone hole: we are made to worry about it by the media, yet all we can safely say about it is that it exists, and we can be sure of that only because meteorology finally have the instruments to observe it. We are told that we caused it in recent years, but actually no one knows how long it has existed. It's been known about since 1934, by the way - did it perhaps exist before that date and nobody was worried because they couldn't observe it? And physics, to give a final example - although they know how to calculate the effects of magnetism and gravity, they don't know what it is. They can't explain it.

And so on, and so on. We are dealing with myths, not with hard scientific facts. The suggestions and theories of science are turned into actual facts" by engineers

developing technologies, and at a public level, where wandering around knowing you don't *really* know how anything works is such a drain on havingness, we cheerfully make assumptions and believe what we are told no matter that it may be complete fiction.

THE AXIOMS

In the past chapters frequent references were made to the axioms of scientology and dianetics. As we happen to be in the science department just now we might as well spend a few paragraphs on the definition of "axiom".

Axioms are the ground a science stands on. According to the dictionary, they are "self-evident truths"; Hubbard says they are "self-evident agreements". Both statements amount to the same thing in that we are dealing with phenomena that can neither be proved nor denied. They are so basic that one can only say: "Yes, this is so" without knowing why. Take Axiom 10, for example: "*The highest purpose in this universe is the creation of an effect.*" One cannot deny that this is so as one cannot behave otherwise, and yet one cannot explain why.

It is impossible to argue about axioms, because if one could one would manage to think on a logical level "below" them - and then they wouldn't be axioms any longer! Axioms are the bottom level of agreement; all logical deductions, experimental hypothesis and scientific theories are derived from them. This is why they are the ground a science stands on. (Interesting enough, no science but mathematics has axioms. So in terms of scientific workmanship it's quite a feat that Hubbard founded scientology and dianetics on them.)

A good axiomatic system has two requirements: 1. they must not contradict each other; 2. they must be complete as well as independent from each other. "Complete" means that valid statements concerning the subject the axioms refer to, can be derived from them; "independent" means that each axiom stands for itself and none can be derived from the other. This latter requirement necessarily limits the number of axioms to the bare minimum. If both requirements are met, the resulting axiomatic system is considered aesthetic. (As long as nobody proves that Hubbard's Axioms do not meet these requirements, one would be justified in considering them an aesthetic whole.)

THE ELECTROPSYCHOMETER (E-METER)

Practically all information on the subject of thetans, entities, Genetic Entities and their various time tracks, gathered in hundreds of thousands of auditing hours, were "dug up" with the help of Hubbard's magic little box, the electro-psychometer or E-meter.

An E-meter is a box with a dial and a needle and some knobs for adjustment. It contains a battery like that of a flashlight. The client holds a pair of ordinary empty food cans, one in each hand, connected to the E-meter by copper leads. A very low-voltage

current runs from the meter through the auditee's body and back to the meter where the circuitry measures minute variations in the current, which show up on the dial. In the 50s this was an absolute novelty (called "skin galvanometer" or "lie-detector") yet today similar devices are used in New Age style counseling, even in the more off-beat forms of psychotherapy and medical diagnosis.

As it plays such a large role in Hubbard's investigations into the mind we must in the name of science - understand its function so as to properly evaluate the information one may get by means of it.

When a "button is pushed" in the thetan by an environmental restimulator, charge is built up and leads to uncontrollable emotional reactions such as blushing, blanching, giggling or crying. Usually one can detect another's charge by direct observation. Very fine charges, though, do not always show on a person's face or body, and to detect them the auditor needs his E-meter. It works like this: the theta field around the auditee's body, consisting of his own mind, his entities and his GE, is influenced by the emotional condition of the person and therefore fluctuates continually. As soon as the E-meter is switched on, an electromagnetic field builds up. The two fields - that of bodyplus-person and that of the meter - interact; changes in the auditee's emotional field are picked up by the E-meter's field and so register on the needle. (It has nothing to do with one's hands sweating and drying.)

The auditor, whilst listening to his client, keeps an eye on the meter, steers the session into highly charged areas and as much as possible keeps it there. Supposing the subject the client wanted to work on was "feeling like a fool", the auditor might ask: "Recall the earliest time you can when you felt like a fool". Now although the client may not recall anything off hand, the meter may show a read and so the auditor will feel justified in insisting that the auditee should look further. How can the auditor be so sure? Because he knows that the tension between "knowing" on the one hand and pretending "not to know" on the other, that is, the tension between a games postulate and its counter-postulate (GPM), produces sufficient emotional energy to register on the meter. If he'd let the auditee "off the hook" after the meter read, he wouldn't do him a favor at all, because he'd accept the auditee's pretense not to know instead of rehabilitating what he really does know.

The needle and the controls on the meter provide a lot of valuable information about the auditee and his case. A read on the needle means: "On this question, answers are available." (In that it resembles the pendulum or the dowser's rod.) The "TA knob", indicating the auditee's resistance against what he is about to discover, tells the auditor how far the auditee is off the mark. (The higher the resistance, the further the auditee is off the mark.) With the "sensitivity knob" the auditor can set the meter to read coarse or fine mental vibrations as needed.

As correct interpretation of the E-meter's responses to the auditor's questions as well as the auditee's answers permits the auditor to keep his auditee right on the main line of his thoughts, emotions and pictures, traumatic incidents can be found and erased much faster with an E-meter than without. Metered auditing is therefore much more

efficient than non-metered auditing. (This of course depends on the skill of the auditor. The meter is not a must, but it helps a lot.)

FACT OR FICTION?

With all the swiftness and directness of approach the E-meter offers and with all the corresponding relief the auditee feels afterwards, one nagging question remains: is it true what the auditee said? In his sessions he spoke of past lives, of extraterrestrial civilizations engaged in galaxy-wide space battles - fair enough, it seemed to help him that he could talk about this, but still: is it true?

“Well”, says the experienced auditor, “it read on the meter to start with, and when the auditee spoke about it further, he dramatized all sorts of pains and misemotions whilst the meter showed a lot of discharge and in the end the needle ‘floated’, indicating that he was in a state of inner harmony regarding the subject - so of course it’s true!” This certainly is good and practical thinking but unfortunately not scientific.

To give an example: someone wants auditing because every time he reads something on political suppression, world conspiracies and Tesla energy devices he feels such pains in his solar plexus that he actually has to drop the book. He is an engineer, has a family; his life looks perfectly fine except that he feels that he never quite does what he ought to be doing. In the session it turns out that his present life is his very first visit to Earth, that he came as a thetan exterior (with no body) from some friendly planet somewhere in this galaxy with a mission to help Earth people with their energy problems, that he got caught by an enemy ship and was implanted to keep him from doing or reading anything that might remind him of his mission. Too painful to continue. After having found this out, the auditee has some huge realizations about his true identity and his political mission; he knows that from now on he can pursue it without any discomfort and actually does so in real life. He joins a scientific society dealing with alternative energy sources, gets active politically, etc. No further pains in the solar plexus.

That he feels good and purposeful now - does that make his story true?

“Well, naturally!”, some may say. There was charge on an area, the area was handled to a cognition and a floating needle, the auditee’s discomfort has disappeared, he can act in life as he desires, and therefore it is true what he found out in session. “Nonsense!”, argues the opposing party. All that happened in session is that the auditee created the sort of pictures he considered to be a good explanation for his problems, and if it had to be as farfetched as being a missionary from outer space - that’s fine; as long as it makes him happy. Everybody has a right to his own paranoia. The poor chap just needed someone to listen to him and now that he has got his weird dreams off his chest he feels normal again. Just because he had certain mental image pictures and felt relieved after recounting them doesn’t necessarily mean that what he saw is objective truth. The meter reactions are a natural side phenomenon; after all, the auditee

considered his story important. In plain terms: first he fooled himself into bad health then he fooled himself back into good health.

From a strictly scientific viewpoint the second argument would have to be favored. The engineer's story doesn't indeed Suffice to prove that there are things like extraterrestrial civilizations. But what can one prove anyway? Can you - without witnesses or documentation - prove that you have lived yesterday? Can you prove that yonder house was your childhood home? "Well, I have some photos showing me as a five-year-old in front of that house!" You are 55 now - are you trying to tell me that this child on the photo was you? Doesn't look like it at all. Prove it to me! It could be any child!

To add yet another angle to the debate, in favor of "it's true": speaking from a very common-sense psychological viewpoint, would that engineer really go through ten to fifteen auditing hours, hours of pain, sweat, sickness and hardship, and would he pay good money for this, if he were but suffering from a childhood fantasy left lying about in some dusty corner of his mental attic? Would it not be much closer to human nature to assume that what he dreamed up deliberately he would let go of equally deliberately, with perhaps as much assistance as a good old chat with a friend? It seems hard to imagine that someone would have to go through the labors of an extended session sequence to get rid of something as light as a truly self-made imagination. (Mind you, the E-meter reads on fancy images, too, but cleaning *Them* up is a matter of minutes. No comparison with the above. And if someone really needed such a contrived grandiose dream to boost his self-confidence, the auditor ought to pay attention not to the actual dream, but to the reason why.)

We don't seem to get anywhere with our argument; obviously we need more data to come to a satisfying conclusion. So let's extend our example (it's a true one, actually): a few months after the successful session with the engineer someone else comes in for auditing, an intelligent woman who turns all foggy and robotic the moment she has to do any type of responsible work and so lies way below her actual potential. The session reveals that in her last life she was a scientist (a man) who had made some remarkable discoveries in the field of physics, attracted the attention of certain power groups, refused to cooperate and was eventually killed by the secret service. The general story of that life can be found in any encyclopedia yet the auditee fits in data which couldn't possibly be known to anyone except the scientist involved. Yet the important part happens after her death. As she leaves her body she feels magnetically attracted to a spaceship orbiting Earth, and gets electric shocks every time she acts on a thought of her own. This way she "learns" that thinking is no good and that following orders like a robot is the survival thing to do. (A thetan identified with his own energy field can indeed be treated with electronics.)

Great, one may think, just goes to show how fruitful her imagination is. Doesn't prove anything!

The point of the story: in both cases, that of the engineer and the lady, it was the same space ship! Time, place, circumstances and description of the crew were closely

resembling each other. Two coinciding statements made independently! Phew, you could say, that's just telepathy; the second auditee somehow picked up the story of the first one and turned it into something else, or perhaps the auditor who is a science fiction buff telepathically inspired both stories. Obviously, not a true word. But the lady had her problems all her life! Would she find relief by telepathically picking up somebody's weird story and turning it into something private? Apart from the fact that using "telepathy" as an explanation isn't particularly scientific either.

Now what about this example, an entirely different one: on March 19, 1992, a solo-auditing session was done because of headaches and tremendous difficulties in concentration. A Russian space ship was spotted, it had frequency generators aboard which would muffle one's wakefulness. The auditor handled the disturbance caused in his personal energy field (GE plus own theta field) and telepathically told the spaceship crew that they shouldn't continue causing such effects. His headaches disappeared. Later, after the session, the auditor heard on the radio that a Russian/German space shuttle had been on its way to the Russian space station Mir. So was it true what the auditor found or wasn't it?

Reminding ourselves of the fundamentals of science outlined above - observations leading to theories, rules and laws, and these again to explanations and predictions - we must conclude the following: if a sufficient number of people, in their sessions, make a sufficient amount of comparable observations regarding certain phenomena, if common denominators can be found, hypothesis be formed and tested out with other auditees in future sessions, and if this procedure makes people feel better one by one, then we are talking about a scientific procedure. Whether the type of universe extrapolated from the information yielded by this procedure is fact or fiction ... Well, who is to say? After all, reality is what we agree on.

In this spirit, chapters 3 to 6 will have to be understood. Hubbard's account of galactic confederations and interstellar wars was consistently confirmed and added to since 1968 by thousands of solo-auditors who never met each other. The restimulating materials revealed to them (called the "Operating Thetan Levels") didn't always fall on grounds well-prepared by plenty of space-age literature since many of these people were not science fiction fans. So they certainly didn't invent their personal variations to Hubbard's theme for their own creative enjoyment or to do Hubbard a favor, no, they simply *found* them.

Their amassed experience is recounted in the next chapter, entitled "The Xenu Myth". Why "myth"? Well, because certain features typical of humanity were never satisfactorily explained by traditional religions, psychologies and sociologies. And a myth, after all, explains things. Says the dictionary: "*Myth* applies particularly to a story connected with the religion or beliefs of a primitive civilization. Myths are told about gods or superhuman beings and are invented to explain beliefs or rituals or something in nature." The point is not whether there is academic truth behind Hubbard's Xenu myth or not, but rather that people respond deeply to its imagery and improve in strength and well being after having come to terms with it in their solo-sessions.

And even if the following chapters were only a collective invention it would at least give one hell of an explanation for the “religions and beliefs” of the “primitive civilization” of this planet!

CHAPTER 3

The Xenu Myth

3.1 A Global Catastrophe

WARNING TO THE READER * A GALACTIC POWER COUP *
BATTLEFIELD EARTH * A PLACE OF EVIL * ON BTs AND CLUSTERS

Some “old scientologist” who started in scientology in the 1970s, 1960s or even before and grew up within the secrecy-mindedness of the Church of Scientology, may think it overly risky and daring, if not irresponsible, to reveal hitherto strictly guarded “confidential” data in an open-to-all pocket book. But there are a number of reasons which seem to make it alright to do so at this particular stage of the game, the main one being that the incidents which will be described, and their perpetrators, have been worked on so thoroughly by so many auditors over several decades that their restimulation potential has been exhausted considerably. This is proven by the fact that in 1968, when the following materials were released to the public, people showed extremely strong reactions when exposed to them - for some solo auditors it took years to audit out their charge - whereas nowadays their effect is comparatively weak. So there seems to be no harm involved in presenting these hitherto confidential data to the public.

Please feel free to reject any or all of this, to see it as allegory or science fiction, as the raving of a madman or a cunning scheme to con money out of the gullible. As Hubbard kept emphasizing: “Only what you have observed yourself is true for you”.

Someone may argue that putting it all out in the open would make people copy the “esoteric” contents of the Xenu myth and make solo-auditing a shallow experience. Against this one may hold that reading about an esoteric truth isn't quite the same as experiencing it oneself and understanding it. Those who aren't ready for the pertinent experiences won't have them - even after reading whole libraries about them. In a way, this serves as a self-protecting mechanism which keeps the mind from getting damaged. However, just to make sure, take this warning:

Warning: Anyone reading on beyond this point does so at their own risk!

Should you take the risk despite this warning and feel any discomfort, nausea or sleeplessness at any point, this is what you can do:

1 . Take vitamin C, E, B 1, calcium and magnesium in large doses. This serves to fortify the body's energy field and keeps the energy impulses produced by “awakened” entities from affecting the Genetic Entity (which would result in sleeplessness and nervousness).

It is possible to use tranquilizers or beer to get on top of the effects, but this is not recommended as it only submerges them.

2. Do physical work, complete physical cycles of action, keep your attention extroverted. Do not go into the contents of the pictures you may see. Don't act against them either; acknowledge their existence, but keep your attention outwards.

3. Use the "Reader's Restimulation Remedy" in the appendix or find an auditor and get the restimulation handled in a session.

A GALACTIC POWER COUP

The following quotations are taken from the so-called "OT III materials"; so they are solo-auditing instructions pertaining to the Operating Thetan Course, Level III. They were handwritten by Hubbard in a rather sketchy way on the 28th of October 1968: "*The implant is calculated to kill (by pneumonia etc.) anyone who attempts to solve it. This liability has been dispensed with by my tech development. (...) In December 67 I knew somebody had to take the plunge. I did it and emerged very knocked out but alive. Probably the only one to do so in 75 000 000 years. I have all the data now but only that given here is needful.*"

Other useful sources of information on the OT III implants are tape 10 of the "Class VIII Auditor Course" of October 1968 and Hubbard's film script "Revolt in the Stars" of the mid-70's where he does not treat the subject confidentially at all, quite the contrary! Loads of gruesome details are revealed. (When referred to, these materials will be abbreviated "OT III", "Tape 10" and "RITS". All quotations without any further indication of their source are "OT III".)

The first page of the OT III materials starts with the memorable words: "*The head of the Galactic Confederation (76 planets around larger stars visible from here) (formed 95,000,000 years ago; (very space opera) solved overpopulation (250 billion or so per planet -178 billion average) by mass implanting. (. . .) His name was Xenu. He used renegades.*"

Now let's look this over bit by bit and comment on it. A Galactic Confederation is mentioned. According to RITS, its 76 planets belong to 21 stars: Sirius, Canopus, Alpha Centauri, Vega, Capella, Arcturus, Rigel, Procyon, Achernar, Beta Centauri, Altair, Betelgeuse, Acrux, Aldebaran, Pollux, Spica, Antares, Formalhaut, Deneb, Regulus and Sol (our sun). The distances are considerable: for Rigel and Deneb, the systems furthest away from Earth, it's 500 light-years. Closest to Earth are Alpha Centauri with 4.3 light-years and Sirius with 8.5 light-years. The rest is somewhere in between. Yet distance didn't seem to be an obstacle. According to Tape 10 it took nine weeks to cover the 400 light-years from Polaris to Earth.

The galaxy we are in is roughly 10.000 light-years thick and 100.000 light-years across. Our next-door neighbor is Andromeda, a galaxy 2.7 million light-years away. As we learned above, the Galactic Confederation was formed 95 million years ago, i.e. 20

million years before the catastrophe, and lasted through various modifications until today.

Incidentally, the names of these stars are strikingly identical to those one finds listed in astronomy books under "The 21 brightest stars in the Northern Hemisphere". Did Hubbard just copy them off from somewhere because he expected the potential watcher of "Revolt in the Stars" to be familiar with them? Are the real stars of the Galactic Confederation perhaps different ones? After all, this datum is taken from a film script, not from the actual OT III materials. But never mind, this won't change any of the events that are about to be narrated. Too many auditors found evidence for them as to worry about the actual star names - particularly as the names revealed by entities do not correspond to any Earth language and are often hard to make out.

What did those 76 planets look like? Some like Earth today, some a bit different, but all in all they would have appeared quite familiar by today's standards. A civilization like in the 1950s, says Hubbard on Tape 10. People had bodies, houses, cars, jobs, wives, husbands, children, telephones, television, and of course interstellar space flight based on space-energy and controlled gravitation.

Earth itself was considered sensationally beautiful and pleasant - tropical plants could be found even north of today's Arctic circle. There were dinosaurs and other spectacular creatures. Small wonder that this planet was a tourist resort and attracted people from all over the galaxy to spend their holidays here. The local population was predominantly white, like today's Europeans; other races were represented, too, mainly by tourists.

Are "178 billion people average" possible? Well, if you were granting each person - man, woman and child - 25 square meters living space, 25 sq.m. working space and 25 sq.m. recreational space (that's 75 sq.m. per person), and if you were constructing a building according to these specifications so as to accommodate the 6 billion people who live on this planet currently, it would cover 450 thousand square kilometers. That's about the size of Spain. All the 6 billion people currently on this planet could live in Spain on one floor. If you built the building in the style of a condominium three floors high, it would cover 150 thousand sq.km, the area of England (without Scotland and Wales). If you built it nine floors high, it would cover a mere 50 thousand sq.km, the size of Holland, Denmark or Switzerland.

So all the people currently living on this planet could be accommodated in an area the size of Switzerland and have the rest of the planet for agricultural purposes and as a nature resort. Of course this would demand advanced solutions regarding energy supply and transport, solutions not based on carbon-based fuel or atomic fission, but that shouldn't worry anyone. Since Nicola Tesla the necessary inventions have been made; all one would have to do is take them out of the security lockers of oil and electricity magnates and actually use them. And food certainly wouldn't be a problem either, if one reformed today's wasteful feeding habits (with agriculture already efficient enough to throw part of the harvest away so as to keep the prices up).

Now on Tape 10 Hubbard mentions up to 250 billion people populating Earth. That's a good 40 times more than the current 6 billion! A three-story condominium according to our specifications would comfortably cover an area the size of Australia; a nine-story one could be easily put up within the boundaries of Mexico. If you built 90-floor skyscraper condominiums - why, you could accommodate all of the 250 billion in Italy! Still a lot of space left to grow food on and take one's holidays in. And there's is no reason why such buildings should look ugly or be "inhuman" .

For those who on hearing these figures start suffering from claustrophobia: in this scheme the population density per square kilometer would be about 4000 - less than that of Frankfurt or New York including their surrounding areas. Please note that the population density of Monaco is 20,000 per sq.km. And nobody runs away from Monaco! So 4000 seems quite tolerable, really. The above scheme is by no means utopic. Between 1930 and 1950 the architect, engineer and inventor Buckminster Fuller de signed 12-floor buildings that could be flown to their location by helicopter floating cities shaped like Egyptian pyramids holding one million people each, and even spherical air-borne cities who were to be kept aloft by sunlight alone³³.

In the light of this, Xenu's claim of "solving overpopulation" was mere pretense, a superficial cover-up for the crime to ensue. Xenu, as we shall see when more is revealed about him, had something else in mind than just kindly reducing the population of his 76 planets. He had an ice-cold, unfeeling greed for total control. *"He caused people to be brought to Teegeeck (Earth) and put an H-bomb on the principal volcanoes (. . .)."* "Certainly a very humanitarian means to "reduce overpopulation" !

One would immediately assume that these volcanoes didn't exist then. Too long ago. But they did! A geological map showing Earth 75 million years ago doesn't look all too different from today ²². The continental drift is too slow as to create a major change even during such a large time span. Then as now, the same geological plates were working against each other. The volcanoes weren't in exactly the same places, but they were there - Mount Rainier, Mount Hood, Mount Shasta, San Georgino, Kilimanjaro, Krakatowa, Mount Washington, the volcanoes of Hawaii, Japan, Indonesia, the Philippines, the Himalayas, the Andes. Imagine H-bombs to be dropped into their craters! Anyone having witnessed the outbreak of Mount St.Helens in California in 1980 can imagine what the world would look like after that.

Regarding the date of the incident, 75 million years ago geologists have discovered a layer of rock containing Iridium, a metal which can't be found in this particular distribution elsewhere on the planet, and called it the "Alvarez layer". It is said to have formed 63 million years ago, the time when the dinosaurs disappeared. One doesn't know what happened exactly but there is an agreement that it was something catastrophic. Neither does one know how long it took - some speak of a few thousand years, others of a few days²². Even the exact date is doubtful! Despite modern dating equipment, measuring errors of ten million-years are to be expected when it comes to magnitudes like 60 or 70 million years ago, as one geologist told me.

Well, someone might say, how come no human bones were found? They found dinosaur skeletons, but no human ones - that proves it that no men were around then, doesn't it! Fair enough, but the question is asked the wrong way. Human bones *have been* found, plenty of them, but dating them - that's the difficulty! For dating, anthropologists generally use the radioactive carbon isotope C 14 contained in bones. But as one needs a good 2 kg of bone to do a proper measurement and most bone samples don't exceed 300 g, and as the error rate for dates older than, 10,000 years is 80% (!), the reliability of this method is exceedingly questionable. Control experiments testing the validity of radiometric dating techniques verify this concern. A single sample of organic material, such as a specific layer of wood from a single tree-ring layer, when submitted to the same laboratory as "different" samples, is often given widely different dates, off by as much as 500 to 3000 years. Again we are not talking about truth or untruth but about how correct the tools of science are³⁴. So why shouldn't it have been Xenu's bombing that created the Alvarez layer and made dinosaurs as well as men disappear? After all, the date of 75 million years ago was found because E-meters reacted to the charge of people regarding that date, and one might rightfully ask where that charge came from if nothing had happened at that time.

Xenu used renegades, we heard. You could buy them with promises of money, drugs and sex. Renegades to what? To the constitution of the Confederation, in use for some millions of years already. A special task force wearing dark blue uniforms watched over it; Hubbard refers to them as "officers loyal to the people". This constitution stipulated that a Supreme Ruler was to be elected by the Loyal Officers. They were Xenu's main enemy in his attempt to usurp this democratic system and turn it into a dictatorship with himself as supreme dictator rather than Supreme Ruler.

He placed secret agents in high political positions who undermined the power of the Loyal Officers and weakened the Constitution- The system had become degraded by identity cards, credit records, fingerprints, passports and income tax - all unconstitutional! Consequently, there was a rise in insolvency, poverty, prostitution and criminality, unheard of before. In Tape 10 Hubbard makes it a strong point that today's insolvency, poverty, prostitution and criminality are nothing but a dramatization, a compulsive repetition of the situation back then. (Earth, by the way, was the least affected by this. Other planets were worse off.)

The growing unrest and rebelliousness amongst Loyal Officers, artists, intellectuals and the population in general became a problem. Xenu had to act fast, because he was at the point of being un-elected. His coup was to happen in three phases. Phase one: the slaughter of every Loyal Officer in the Confederation. Phase two: the destruction of the main defense base on every planet. Phase three: the abduction of minorities and unwanted elements to Teegeeack and their extermination.

Billions of thetans were taken to Earth and its volcanoes H-bombed. Still, Xenu didn't make it to supreme dictator: "*Loyal Officers (to the people) captured him after 6 years of battle and put him in an electronic mountain trap where he still is. "They" are gone. The place (Confederation) has since been a desert. The length and brutality of it all was such that this Confederation never recovered.*"

An electronic trap is a device which pins a thetan (i.e. the energy field he created and identifies with) to a fixed place by electronic means. This was done to Xenu. However, it is debatable that he is "still there". He might have gotten out. There is evidence for as well as against it. One, a dialogue quoted from RITS: "*Newscaster: How long will the power last (...)? Electrician: About seventy-four million years, I think, possibly more. Long enough.*" Against that speaks Tape 10 where Hubbard mentions an "eternal battery". Two, a conversation between Hubbard and Robertson, a close staff member, around 1968 which Robertson told me about in 1985. Hubbard wondered if he should make it part of the OT III materials that Xenu had actually escaped and was active again or if that wouldn't be a bit too much for people. OT III was considered dangerous enough anyway; it had to be done with a doctor at standby as one was afraid people might die through over-restimulation! So, according to Robertson, Hubbard decided to cushion the message a bit and wrote that Xenu was still in his trap. On the other hand, Otto Roos, like Robertson an old-time associate of Hubbard, says that Hubbard personally showed him a mountain on Madeira within which Xenu was supposed to be held captive.

In view of the third piece of evidence, a philosophical consideration, both might actually be true. You can certainly lock a thetan up by trapping his field electronically, but there is nothing to keep this thetan (if he's powerful enough) from re-constituting himself in the course of time, because after all, being the source of his theta quanta he could create a second field at will and rejoin the game. The trapped part of course would remain trapped - his own attention literally held in place by electronic devices. So you could always get at him through that trapped part. The fourth bit of evidence is that Xenu was actually audited telepathically by Robertson and his associates between 1986 and 1988 and at that time, he seemed very active indeed; one didn't seem to audit only a locked-up portion of him (more in chapter 6).

Was the Confederation indeed a desert since? Personally, I found no session evidence by any solo-auditor to support this. Earth is no desert (except spiritually) and what I hear (in auditing) from recent arrivals from some other of the 21 stars of the former Confederation, makes it seem that their home planets aren't that badly off either. After all they are advanced enough to come over and help us out, something we couldn't say of ourselves.

BATTLEFIELD EARTH

The H-bombing incident is generally referred to as "Incident Two" or 'Inc.2'. There is a much earlier one, too, called Incident One (Inc.1); it will be spoken about later. For now we'll just look at Incident Two and use Hubbard's "2nd Note" of 28 Oct 68 to do so.

"This incident is over 36 days long. (That's the actual implant done on Earth.) Capture on other planets was weeks or months before the implant. Those on Teegeeck

(Earth) were just blown up except for Loyal Officers who were (shortly before the explosion on Earth) rounded up."

Now how can you implant someone after his body has been torn to shreds in an atomic explosion? And before that, who was captured, taken to Earth and implanted? Bodies or thetans? The answer to both questions is: "thetans". You can implant a thetan even when he has no body. He has an energy field, and that's what you can pin him down with and then force pictures and concepts on him by electronic means or by using theta energy. And regarding transport- one can ship plenty more thetans per space flight than bodies. We'll come to that in a moment.

First, though, we have to take a closer look at what an implant *is*. "1. a painful and forceful means of overwhelming a being with artificial purpose or false concepts in a malicious attempt to control and suppress him. 2. an electronic means of overwhelming the thetan with a significance. 3. an unwilling and unknowing receipt of a thought. An intentional installation of fixed ideas, contra survival to the thetan." ¹ The mechanics of this have been covered in the chapter 1. They are the same as in forming a ridge. The thetan (no matter if with or without body) is exposed to an effect he cannot have, such as electronic vibrations, electric shocks or physical pain, perhaps whilst he is drugged or hypnotized. Sentences are beamed at him, spoken or played off to him. He is shown pictures or receives concepts (postulates) through electronic transmitter beams. He pushes energy against this to defend himself; this acts like a wax plate and the information streaming in on him is stenciled in it. His theta quanta defense shield does the opposite to protecting him: it serves to record the incident for all times. As well he makes a succumb postulate which keeps the whole thing in place and makes it becoming re-created everytime he thinks of that postulate. Perhaps he receives some foreign postulates during the implant and a false date for it, too, as a precaution against nosy auditors finding out about it. And he gets a forgetter-command, just to make sure: "I cannot remember this. I forget! Forget! Forget!"

If done properly this sticks for good. The thetan now has an information package consisting of self-created energy, foreign postulates and pictures and on top a self-made postulate to seal it all up and make it inaccessible. From now on one can rely on this thetan not to go near any games which might remind him of any part of this information. Too painful! Which is precisely what the implanter had in mind achieving.

Here is the complete sequence of Inc.2: "1. Capture (being shot). 2. Freezing. 3. Transport to Teegeack (sometimes via a relay point). 4. Being placed near a volcano. 5. Hydrogen bomb dropped in or on the volcano. Explosion. Terrific winds. Thetan carried over peak. Electronic ribbon came up. He stuck to it. It was then pulled down and he was (as part of a group) implanted with R6. ("R6" is Hubbard's technical name for this implant.) 6. Beginning implant (. . .). 7. Various picture sequences. 8. The 7's and CC & OT 11 materials. (More technical names of implants.) 9. 36 days of picture implants which give a vast array of materials and 3 (false) explanations for the bombing. 10. Transport to Hawaii or Las Palmas for packing up into clusters.

The pictures contain God, the Devil, Angels, Space Opera, Theaters, helicopters, a constant spinning, a spinning dancer, trains and various scenes very like modern England. You name it, it's in this implant. We call it in it's entirety 'R6'“

Let's break the Inc. 2 sequence down to individual steps. (Unless mentioned otherwise, the data are taken from Tape 10 and padded with solo-auditor reports.)

Re 1: The capture consisted of selective and later of mass killings, done by bombing, machine gunning, poisoning. Blast weapons on the basis of electronic beams and lasers were used, no gunpowder. The strength of the impact and its suddenness where usually such that it happened to dozens and hundreds of people at the same time. Billions and billions were killed on various planets; they were all taken to Earth.

Re 2: In order to transport them, they had to be frozen. Not the dead bodies as such but the thetans escaping from the dead bodies. How do you freeze a thetan? You spray the area with a mixture of frozen alcohol and glycol. Very cold! So cold that it paralyzes all electronic-type vibration near it - for example a thetan's energy field. Especially when he does his utmost to defend himself with his theta energy! The more he ridges the easier he is to spot and capture. In the end, you had blocks of ice with thousands of thetans stuck to them.

Re 3: These were transported to Teegeeack. The space craft had cooling chambers. Given their huge payload capacity and the large number of thetans one could freeze into an ice block, not many flights per planet were necessary. Flight duration to Teegeeack was several weeks only. The space ships actually looked like DC-8s without propellers (an example of today's civilization copying the incident).

The relay point mentioned was Coltus, a planet of a political system near the North Star and not part of the Galactic Confederation. Xenu had his personal outpost there. Perhaps this is where he received his atom bombs from. It took nine weeks from Coltus to Teegeeack. Loyal Officers captured on other planets were taken to Coltus alive, implanted there (with body) in the style of brainwashing, i.e. there were turned around ideologically, sent back to their home planets and made to send their own troops against the people or worked for renegade troops whilst wearing their original Loyal Officer uniforms. This made it look to the population as if the Loyal Officers were behind the blood bath, which of course added to the confusion.

Re 4: Thetans were ferried in by the billions and billions and billions. Space craft came in and dropped their load of iceblocks near the principal volcanoes of Earth. This didn't always go smoothly. Some were dropped in the sea or in the wrong place. Many mistakes occurred. The renegades were good at shedding blood but bad on discipline. When the entity of one bomber pilot was audited who had been so drunk during his flight that he crash landed his craft against the side of the volcano and of course was bombed and implanted along with everybody else. (Prior to auditing the actual incident a drug handling had to be done, to relieve his fogginess.)

Re 5: The bomb was dropped; it exploded, ripped the volcano open, and the combined force of bomb and volcano eruption created up draught winds of such force that the thetans were whirled about and carried over the peaks. The ice blocks had of course melted already.

To make sure that nobody would be blown off the planet and get away, an “electronic ribbon” had already been installed. In Tape 10 it's called a “standing wave” above the volcano. It looked like an umbrella. Thetans were whirled up and stuck to it. Around each volcano, funnels formed and down these funnels the thetans would run from “umbrella” to ground level like condensed steam off a window pane. This is how they got channeled down.

Re 6 and 7: Now they were packed up and moved along inside some sort of pipeline or tunnel equipped with projector machines all around it. They were exposed to sound and color pictures. The implant started about three days after the bombing.

Re 8: The “7's and CC & OT II materials” are implant packages named after the auditing actions Hubbard devised to crack them.

Re 9: The key implant lasted 36 days. It was done as a super colossal, three-dimensional motion picture containing everything which in this civilization on Earth, is dear to our hearts: a white-haired and bearded god, devils, hellfire, archangels like Gabriel or Michael, religious symbols, archbishops complete with crosiers and all the pompousness of Roman Catholicism, a cross with a man hanging from it, the type of theaters still in use today with spectators' boxes left and right from the stage, sexual torture done in leather costumes with whips and chains, perversions such as sex with children, war pictures with crashing helicopters (dramatized in Vietnam), space ships, skyscrapers, in fact the whole architecture of Manhattan and other “modern” banking and business centers, the whole of Hollywood complete with motion pictures, writers, forever glorious film star types like Marilyn Monroe or Clark Gable, psychiatrists doing their electric shocking (a truly piquant picture is that of a crucified psychiatrist), surgeons senselessly dissecting bodies down to the bones - and to top it all, exploding bombs are shown. In addition to the actual bomb explosions on the volcanoes, *pictures* of bomb explosions are shown, just to make sure that some day somebody will have the good idea of blowing the whole planet up once again.

The more we “progress”, the more we are copying the type of civilization implanted during the 36 days. Planetary suicide is programmed therewith.

Re 10: After the implant a large number of thetans from each volcano were boxed up, taken to Las Palmas (Canary Islands) and Hawaii and packed together; some packages were shot into space, others dropped into the depth of the ocean. The remaining thetans were left to drift about the planet - always inside the electronic ribbon, of course.

A PLACE OF EVIL

Let's take a breather at this point and look the situation over. Earth was wiped out. Clouds of dust and smoke, black skies, severely dropped temperatures, radiation. Nuclear winter. No life.

At least no life on the surface of the planet. Sea life probably wasn't quite as severely affected since water is an excellent radiation protector. Only a few meters of surface water would protect ocean life quite well. Of course clean waters might have gradually become diluted with contaminated waters but to what extent and with what implications for sea life is a question left to be answered by a marine biologist and a radiation expert. Perhaps the Loch Ness monster is older than we all think (if there really is one).

Irrespective of what happened under the sea, Teegeeack became very badly reputed after Incident 2. It came to be known as an evil place. It was cut off politically. Nobody wanted to have to do with it. Mutineers, deserters and criminals were occasionally dumped here. (The British Empire used Australia for the same purpose, obviously a dramatization.) Some space pirates voluntarily took cover here - they knew nobody was going to come after them!

Not only in biological but as well in spiritual terms, a gigantic catastrophe had occurred. Hubbard rightfully refers to it as the "4th dynamic engram". Usually one would refer to the 4th dynamic as "all mankind". Here, however, the populations of 76 planets were involved- 76 4th dynamics!

Billions and billions of thetans were brought here and were implanted. They are still here.

Hubbard calls them "Body Thetans" or "BTs" because they are thetans who cling to bodies in swarms. Bodies are a stable datum for them and a very much sought-after item indeed. Usually one doesn't notice them. One unknowingly identifies with the pictures and postulates of Body Thetans, which cling to one whilst one walks about on Earth. As they all had the same incident they believe they are "one", and you, not noticing them, believe you are one with them. This may lead to tremendous restimulations and dramatizations on a personal as well as cultural level.

The majority of Earth population, 250 billion, was killed as a consequence of nuclear winter setting in. Even after death there was no escape because of the electronic ribbons. They as well are still here They are not Body Thetans but simply thetans in search of a body as a chance to incarnate. (After all, there were 250 billion people on Earth back then, today only six.)

ON BTs AND CLUSTERS

Let's see how a Body Thetan (BT) was formed. At the Capture on of the 76 planets, and even before they were murdered, thetans attempted to defend themselves

against the horror scenario by pushing energy against the incident. They formed ridges. Then their bodies were killed and they left them. A moment later, at the Freezing, not only these ridges but as well the complete theta fields of thetans and GEs stuck to ice blocks and were transported away. These lumps of theta quanta arriving on Teegeack, are called BTs.

A Body Thetan therefore is not a “live thetan” but just a ridge disconnected from his its maker (the thetan proper) and containing all information about the identity of the original thetan. A thetan, to remind you, consists of a set of postulates and on their basis creates mental energies and masses, his vibrational field. He is alive to the extent that he can do this. Due to the* overwhelmedness did the thetans involved in Incident 2 not immediately recreate their vibrational fields after they had been stripped off them. Some did this after a certain time had passed, others stand paralyzed up to this day. In either case a BT would be but an entity, if a very complex and “potent” one. In contrast, a thetan whose body perished on Earth during the catastrophe is not an entity but a real thetan - a rather weak and discouraged one, though.

The “owner” of a BT, after recovering from his shock (which may take a long time!) might re-create an energy field anew. His ridge, however (the BT), would remain here on Earth as it would be kept energized by the GPM formed during the incident. So the owner-thetan might take a body and start a new life up on his home planet - but he surely would have a lot of compulsive attention on Earth! After all, a large packet of his attention units is held captive here. They cannot be retrieved unless this faraway thetan looks at and duplicates the whole incident. Due to the implanting this is made very difficult. And even if he tried, it might act back on him telepathically and make him dramatize the implant on his home planet. A perfect galaxy-wide spiritual contamination !

“Clusters” are BTs grouped around a shared picture. They all have the same incident. One Cluster for example consisted of a whole school class plus their teacher; their bodies were destroyed simultaneously the instant a bomb exploded in the school house. BTs in a Cluster believe that they all had the same incident at the same time and in the same place - which obviously isn't true as they didn't all die within the same split second and each of them had a different location in space when it happened. As soon as each of the BTs forming a Cluster recognizes that he had his *own* position in space and time, the Cluster will fall apart.

A person with BTs and Clusters on him will unknowingly identify with them, that is they think they are him and he thinks he is them. Clusters are dramatized in a tendency of people to stick together in groups, to go with the crowd, to share opinions unthinkingly, and in the enjoyment of “being one” like during rock festivals or football world cups.

BTs and Clusters strongly react to violence and in turn, when restimulated into action, cause violent behavior; this is why people when exposed to atom bomb explosions on TV will experience peculiar body sensations and an inexplicable fascination, or why they will go crazy at catastrophe alarms in closed areas and

stampede each other to death. They are easily overwhelmed. They may actually fear crowds (the opposite to the above!).

Restimulative incidents as well as new accidents and injuries, cause new Clusters to form or old Clusters to cake up with each other (“cumulative Clusters”). In auditing, one breaks cumulative Clusters by finding each instant of their caking up from late (the present) to early (long ago) along the time track.

We saw above that most of Teegeeack's population died of the natural consequences of the disaster. They weren't exploded, they weren't implanted - they simply died because the whole planet had become a dark, cold desert. So the indigenous Teegeeackans didn't become BTs. They were simply very confused, very ridgy thetans with no bodies and nowhere to go, and they stayed that way. They are still here.

Yet you, the reader, most likely didn't experience Inc.2 yourself. Supposing you were one of the original Teegeeackans, you would have become so restimulated by these lines that you would have dropped the book long ago (which you didn't).

If you had suffered Inc.2 as a foreigner, a non-Teegeeackan abducted to Teegeeack, you'd be a BT (which you can't possibly be).

Which permits one to conclude that you have come only recently to this planet, at the most a few thousand years ago. Many others did, too, from either side - some to help in re-civilizing the place, some to police it and keep it suppressed.

This vast amount of BTs, confused Teegeeack-thetans and newcomers would explain the queues for new bodies. World population keeps growing and there is still such a shortage of bodies that thetans fight over them. Strong thetans, usually newcomers, will manage to get good bodies in well-to-do families; Teegeeackans who suffered the incident but weren't implanted, make it up to “ordinary citizens” with absolutely no spiritual ambitions; BT's, the worst grade, wind up running bodies at the bottom of society; quite often many BTs and Clusters will share one body and command him about which leads to some very irrational behavior, particularly in places where violence, criminality, drugs and pornography abound. Scarcely any free theta but full dramatization of Inc.2.

3.2 Of Gods and Angels

INCIDENT ONE * IMAGINARY UNIVERSES *
A MAGICAL MULTI-MEDIA SHOW * THE END OF SINGLENES *
THE BEGINNING OF TIME * GAMES PREPARATIONS *
TRAPPING ATTENTION * XENU RECRUITS HIS TEAM *
THE GAME TAKES OFF * A NETWORK TO CONTROL ALL

INCIDENT ONE

Xenu's activities date a lot further back than a mere 75 million years. Then, with himself as Supreme Controller, he only repeated the attempt to make a very old intention of his come true the intention to control *all* thetans, to be their one and only master, their god. Bizarre as this may sound we will eventually see that he got surprisingly far with this plan.

His first very definite impact within the framework of this universe - a universe defined by theta quanta games - he made eons ago when he staged Incident One. The handwritten OT III script says this about it: "*Incident 1 occurred about 4 Quadrillion years ago + or -. It is very much earlier than Inc. 2 which occurred only 75 000 000 years ago (a bit less). Incident 2 is only peculiar and general on this planet and nearby stars, whereas Incident 1 is to be found on all thetans.*"

"To be found on all thetans" - quite a statement! It ought to be modified, though, to "all thetans who were here at the time". Only those who were in this universe at that time received it. Those who entered this universe later did not receive it but became contaminated with it. It's part of the agreement of being here. Inc.1 is the basic unknown agreement concerning the universe we live in, its prerequisite and its fundament.

To clarify the time span: 4 quadrillion, that's a 4 followed by fifteen zeroes. Compared to 75 million, it means going back a huge span of time. Supposing one million years were one millimeters 75 million would be 7,5 centimeters. And on the same scale, 4 quadrillion would be four thousand kilometers. 7,5 cm in relation to 4.000 km! That's the length of your index finger compared to a bee line between Lisbon and Moscow.

Here is the sequence of Incident 1: "*Occurs at Start of Track. Loud snaps. Waves of light. Chariot comes out, turns right and left. Cherub comes out. Blows horn, comes close. Shattering series of snaps. Cherub fades back (retreats). Blackness dumped on thetan.*"

These two quotations are pretty much all Hubbard ever said about Incident 1. It was considered super-restimulative and therefore given highest security ratings. In Tape 10 it was merely mentioned but not discussed. To get details we have to rely on the reports of solo-auditors. Their data form the background material to the following text.

IMAGINARY UNIVERSES

Incident 1 occurs at “start of track”. To explain why this incident marks the beginning of the time track, we’ll have to look first at “everyday life” 4 quadrillion years ago and then at the actual occurrence of Inc.1 itself.

There were no bodies then, no organic life, no planets and no physical universe. There were thetans and theta creations, and that’s all there was. Thetans looked like invisible or perhaps slightly colored energy fields. They weren’t entirely amorphous but had, depending on their wishes, definite shapes. Some actually made their fields look like human bodies.

Back at the beginning of time, everyone’s mental images and creations would have been noticed by everyone around. Nothing was “real” in the sense of today’s mest universe solidity. Yet an imagined table was to the thetans then, with their superior “theta perceptions”, as real, visible and tangible as a wooden table would be to you. Any mental image picture was visible to everyone.

Thetans would individually create three-dimensional light objects and play with them. Or they would co-create things. Everything consisted of conglomerations of theta quanta. One thetan would create something, show it to another who would add to the creation or change it and they would play with it. Finally they would get bored, drop their toy and go away.

Whole universes were dreamed up that way, gigantic and complex games cycles, and as well everyday things such as bodies and plants and houses. Thetans played “real life” in the same way as children do today - all make-believe with no consequences. Much of what was dreamed up then came true as our history, our life today and our future, too.

In the course of time, things became more and more solid- the way they are now. As we know from chapter 1, there is only one way to take a creation apart for good (to un-mock it): restoring the individual theta quanta to their rightful owners. Anything else is but a transformation of energy into other forms or states. But one didn’t always bother to unmock the things one had created, and so they stayed and became more solid.

To give an example: imagine theta quanta to be little colored plastic building blocks. Supposing ten children each had differently colored blocks and were building a toy house, with each of them adding his blocks to this co-creation. When they get fed up with their game, they leave the creation and go elsewhere. The house is left standing.

Any attempt to undo this co-creation, like burying it, burning it, crushing it to powder or dumping it, wouldn’t work. Only when each of the ten creators feel accountable for their individual building blocks, take them back and make them vanish, would the creation disappear. They have mocked those blocks (theta quanta) up, now - in order to end the cycle of action - they would have to un-mock them. But usually they

didn't. Why? Because the more thetans play with a creation, the more theta quanta are added to it and the more tedious it becomes to take the thing apart again.

So instead of un-mocking creations it was much less trouble if one dumped them. No shortage of space, after all. And no shortage of theta quanta, either, since all you have to do to get them is create them. A thetan, as we saw, is an "energy-space production unit". There is no scarcity unless he considers it so. If he doesn't, there is unlimited supply.

This wide-spread irresponsibility was to lead to a lot of trouble. Yet without Incident 1 it wouldn't have become as bad as it did. Inc.1 plays a key role.

A MAGICAL MULTI-MEDIA SHOW

Above we have sketched the general picture: unending space with thetans busily playing their games and usually having a lot of fun. Then, roughly 4 quadrillion years ago, word spread that Xenu had prepared a marvelous super-gigantic multi-media show. Absolutely smashing! One had to have seen it. All about angels, as usual ("Don't we know old Xenu"), but really worth attending. A must.

So you went there. It looked like a huge circus-tent floating in space. (Circus tents are indeed a dramatization of this.) As you came closer, frequency detectors picked up your personal energy pattern and played music to you that harmonized perfectly with the vibrational fabric you consisted of. An aesthetic experience of sorts!

Smiling lackeys ushered you in and you took a seat in the most unbelievable of all possible attractions: an artificial body of impressive and unheard-of solidity! (Today we wouldn't even see it, so transparent it was. As if made of glass. But to thetans then it was as solid as a shop window dummy would be to us.) The function of this "astral doll body" was very important in that it gave you a definite location. Lacking that, the things to come wouldn't have been possible.

The show went off as described in the introductory quotation: first loud cracks or snaps shocking everybody, then lovely waves of light, then a three-dimensional light chariot with a mighty angel on it holding a trumpet and blowing it as he drew nearer. All very novel and exciting. Then a second, shattering series of snaps, more shocking than the first one. Then the cherub faded back and all went black.

This imagery is familiar to us because it was dramatized since. Look at Roman chariot races, at high priests and god-kings standing tall in their white garb; look at renaissance paintings and baroque churches - they contain enough chariots and trumpeting angels to do another Incident 1 with.

But where is the implant? The show seems fairly soft, doesn't it; so where is the bad part? The truth of the matter is, they didn't even know it was an implant. In fact

some thetans queued up for a second and third treat and afterwards told their friends about it. Such a good show! Really shocked you all the way through. Very impressive!

THE END OF SINGLENESS

The implant part of the show is cleverly hidden indeed. It occurred during the “snaps”. Imagine yourself sitting in a movie theater just before the movie starts. Your attention isn’t focused anywhere in particular. Suddenly there is a loud snap, like of a gun. You’d turn around to see where it came from, wouldn’t you? Then, as the show starts, you concentrate on the screen and become absorbed by what you see - and suddenly another series of snaps! Panic and confusion break out. And the lights don’t go on! All black.

This is what happened during the snaps: theta quanta were stuck to the thetans in their doll bodies. To compare this with the movie theater example - it’s like someone in the middle of all this confusion would stick a piece of chewing gum to your coat. You wouldn’t notice. You might not even notice afterwards, if the piece were small enough, and nobody else would, either.

Of course you would take your coat off eventually and be free of the blemish, but - and here is the catch - thetans can’t take their coats off. They *are* their theta fields or “theta bodies”. The “chewing gum” had become stuck to *them*, it had become embedded in their very vibratory fabric.

It consisted of theta quanta. Prefabricated lumps of theta quanta were shot at the thetans during the snaps, at thetans who had taken the position of a doll body for the duration of the implant show and therefore had a definite and known location. (That thetans took their viewpoint inside a foreign-made *body* at this occasion instead of using some other shape or form serving the same purpose, is extremely significant as it eventually led to the condition of today where one walks about inside a solid flesh body and doesn’t usually get out except at body death.)

At the end of Incident 1 there was blackness. It wasn’t literally “dumped” on the thetans, although it felt like it. The sensation of blackness stemmed from total withdrawal, from trying to evade the shocking snaps. If you pulled in your attention units from all around, there would be but blackness.

THE BEGINNING OF TIME

Let us return to the enigmatic sentence right at the beginning of this chapter: that Inc. 1 happened at “start of track”. Before Inc. 1 there were individual cycles of action. There was no common time because there was no common reference point. Time, after all, can only be measured with regard to a reference point, because time implies change. And change can only be perceived if you can observe two points in relation to one another. Observing one single point only gives the impression of “no time”.

Before Inc. 1 everybody had their own cycles of action, their own changes, their own time cycles. Time was a strictly subjective phenomenon. After Inc.1 time came to be an objective parameter - because everybody *had* Incident 1. A fundamental change in the relation of thetans to their universes had been created. Before, you could unmock things you had created, if you cared to. You got the whole gang together and said: "Let's take this to pieces again!" And, with a bit of grumbling perhaps, they did. After Inc.1 this wasn't possible anymore. Because everybody unconsciously had a tiny, foreign-made, hidden creation (the prefabricated theta lumps) sitting on himself. Therefore anything he created, be it alone or together with others, had a foreign ingredient that remained imperceptible. Each thetan unknowingly kept adding something to his creations that wasn't his and therefore couldn't unmock them any more. They would *stay!* (Unmocking something involves seeing the entirety of it exactly as it is; see Ax. 12, 16.)

Likewise it went with space. Before Inc. 1 it had been "insular", restricted to the dimensions of the playing field one shared with one's friends, it was "private" as no other thetans noticed it let alone participated in it, and after the game, this space was simply made to disappear. After Inc.1, this became impossible. Insular spaces, once created, would stay and eventually add up to one great common space - akasha.

Things became solid. Mental image pictures, theta creations, visions of universes - they became increasingly solid. The age of the mest-universe, composed of "real" matter, energy, space and time, had begun.

(Should you feel any restimulation you ought to consult the "Auditing Notes" following the Reader's Restimulation Remedy in the appendix. Their numbers conform with the step-by-step approach of this text; at this point, for example, Auditing Note 1 would apply. The restimulation one feels usually isn't one's own but that of a BT being awakened by this text. It follows that in solo-auditing one doesn't audit oneself but BTs and Clusters the eye-witnesses of the catastrophe.)

GAMES PREPARATIONS

Sometimes a BT might have suffered even earlier, similar incidents the so-called "pre- 1 incidents". Taking Inc. 1 as a common reference point for measuring time, one might say that the pre-1 incidents are *before* the beginning of time. In the pre-1 incidents, the pre-fabricated lumps of theta quanta mentioned before were designed and tested out. This project was started approximately 17 quadrillion years ago. It was Xenu's idea, of course. (You may wonder how it is possible to assess such time spans. Easy. When you, after a lot of auditing, have gotten used to 4 quadrillion as a reference point, you have no trouble thinking in multiples of 4 quadrillion.)

All pre-1 incidents are "friendly implants". They don't hurt. They always follow the same pattern: you were shown luminous images of gods, angels, heavenly judges

(Xenu just loved these images), and whilst you were absorbed by your impressions, prefabricated bits (“prefabs”) were stuck to you.

It’s not that you always watched as a spectator what happened on stage, no, you sometimes participated yourself, like in a theater. After all, the imagery and the “actors” (luminous images) were about as solid as you were yourself! But of course you knew the difference between an animated creation and a real thetan, and you’d play along with the imagery and have fun. In one incident, a white-bearded god had the thetan kneel in front of him and touched his “head” with something like a bishop’s crosier, quite in the fashion of a medieval knighting ceremony. At this point the prefab was transferred to the thetan without him knowing. Imagine someone (unknowingly) swearing eternal allegiance to Xenu! Yet it was done. (This is dramatized even today, for example in some of the rituals of Freemasonry.) (See Auditing Note 2.)

TRAPPING ATTENTION

Now where did Xenu get those prefabs from? Quite simple - by hoovering up theta quanta and putting them in a bag.

Thetans, as we saw above, loved to create. They had started doing so much earlier than 17 quadrillion years ago, naturally, long before the first pre- 1 incident. And, to repeat, they were too easy-going as to really make up their minds and un-create what they had put together. Result: loads of dumped creations floating about. All you had to do is Hoover them up and use them.

This didn’t just give you some colorless, neutral energy units no! Because theta quanta are never neutral. They are attention units. They are what a thetan perceives with. As well he can use them to create something. Therefore, in each creation, the attention of its creator is tied up and so, when you have caught someone’s attention, you have caught *him!*

The method: you sucked them in, sent them through a few spins and stored them as “energy spheres”. From this reservoir you could scoop up bits and stick them on thetans.

XENU RECRUITS HIS TEAM

Back in the beginning days of Xenu’s game, long before Inc.1, long before the pre-1 incidents or the hoovering, many thetans genuinely admired Xenu and felt persuaded to follow him. And indeed, at the start of his game, Xenu didn’t coerce - he persuaded. Compared to his initial lightness and cunning, Inc.2 was a brutal and bombastic power show.

Do not imagine Xenu as a dark power. He was that at the time of Inc.2, yes - yet in the early, early days he was a mighty, brilliant, radiant thetan, endowed with a

fabulous ability to envision grandiose games, whole universes of games, and to draw people into them by his sheer charisma. Of all thetans, he was the most fascinating and alluring. A very few only managed to escape his charms. His plans may have been dark, but his appearance was as impressive as the Milky Way in the night sky.

His recruitment method was exceedingly simple. He just engulfed you with the gentle, irresistible wave of his power, until you felt hypnotized like a rabbit facing a cobra, and then sweetly said: "You are just the sort of person I always needed . . ." And you would say: "What, poor humble me needed by you, mighty magician?" And he'd reply: "Indeed so", and bestow a few of his glittery bits upon you, fine and shimmering like fairy dust, or perhaps a medallion or a hand-signed photo. And you'd grab them and hold them close to your thetanish bosom as your most secret treasure, and feel elated. And that was your downfall.

By identifying with Xenu's theta quanta (because remember, everything then, be it fairy dust or medallions, was made of this material), by identifying with his theta quanta you voluntarily and by your own decision joined Xenu's game. Identifying with them meant identifying with him!

No specially staged incident took place, where someone would slyly stick prefabs on unsuspecting thetans. No, they took them by their own volition! And so a bond between them and him was installed, a bond of theta quanta welded together by postulates. Any thought of Xenu, any intention he wanted executed was transmitted through the telepathic link established by this bond. Xenu's followership was very devote. They wanted this experience, wanted to know what it would feel and turn out like.

Why would these bonds last forever? To uncreate some particle you have to see it totally as it was made ("as-is"). But in this instance a) thetans were delighted to own something from Xenu and wouldn't want to destroy it; b) they had no idea it was harmful; c) in order to unmock it they would have had to duplicate not just the appearance of the creation but the creator's viewpoint as well - which means that they would have to have been able to be as powerful as Xenu, and able to completely understand him and his intentions. Quite a tall order! (See Auditing Note 3.)

THE GAME TAKES OFF

As Xenu's followership grew in number, he designed the project we know already and delegated them to his executives, such as hoovering up dumped creations, such as staging innocent little theater plays, such as finding ways how best to stick a prefab to a thetan. When it all had matured to perfection (which lasted from 17 to 4 quadrillion years ago), he staged Incident 1. It was done in more than one circus tent, by the way, and they were all slightly different from each other, but the show was basically the same. And all thetans in the universe came to get the implant.

Why did anyone play along? What made Xenu so exceedingly attractive?

Well, not all thetans were equally large and gifted at that stage of their development. Some had left the state of pure static longer ago than others, some had played their games more successfully than others. Some very old ones even drew from the insights and results of past games cycles earlier than static! Because static in its pure form, as pointed out in the philosophical chapters, is but a transitional state.

There were old and young thetans, experienced and inexperienced ones, winners and losers. And there were the bored ones, too, those in need of inspiration. They had played within the confines of universes created by themselves and adhered to rules designed by themselves; either they had been alone or with others, but because they had no trouble reading the minds of those others, things had become just too predictable and tedious. There was a thirst for bigger games, for novel ones, a thirst for greater freedoms, barriers and purposes.

Xenu offered the game of games: universal control. Control of all thetans. Games rulership. Oneself a cause point, everybody else an effect point.

This was sensationally desirable! Because all of Xenu's recruits had had games losses and had gone down at least to boredom on the scale of emotions, and perhaps even down to grief. (Thetans do have emotions! Even the bodiless ones. They have energy fields, and emotions are an energy manifestation.) They had learned by their own experience that staying successfully at cause was difficult and that being effect was hurtful. And they knew that winning was better than losing.

They decided to join what seemed to be the winning side. And so Xenu's game gained momentum. (See Auditing Note 4.)

A NETWORK TO CONTROL ALL

To summarize: to prepare for Incident 1, theta quanta were hoovered up from wherever one could find them, mixed and stored. In the pre-1's and the actual Inc.1 they were re-distributed by clandestinely sticking them on thetans. All of this was planned by Xenu and executed by him and his helpers. It took roughly 13 quadrillion years (from 17 to 4 quadrillions ago).

The result of Inc. 1: theta quanta of all thetans sitting on all other thetans. All thetans were unknowingly connected with each other by stolen theta quanta. A gigantic control network had been established.

Xenu's very own theta quanta, and not too few of them, were mixed in as well. And he most certainly did *not* have a prefab sitting on him. He was in the safest possible condition, because he could causatively reach anyone anywhere through his communication lines but couldn't be reached himself (such was his logic). His intentions, his will would from now on, unbeknownst to the thetans involved, penetrate all theta worlds, all minds, all creations.

Xenu, the thetan to control all other thetans; Xenu, the Supreme Controller. He had made it.

So he thought.

3.3 Before Time Began

THE AKASHA CHRONICLE * LUCIFER AND HIS DISCIPLES * AN ENERGY PRESERVATION CONFERENCE * GAMES ALTERNATIVES * TWO CONTESTANTS

Xenu had misjudged his game because of a fundamental error, a naive error, one might say: he had believed that he could get thetans to play with bits of energy and that way make them forget their power to postulate their own freedom. He had underestimated the importance of the dynamic of thoughts and postulates, the 8th dynamic. He had misjudged the “knowingness” of thetans, their inborn wisdom and the intensity of their desire to return to the static state.

The longer he played his game, the more tension built up between what was (fixated theta) and what should be (static theta) and the more he had to stop, stop, stop. Instead of comfortably leaning back and enjoying his game from the outside, he was drawn in more and more. The controller became the controlled. Towards the end he needed something as heavy and brutal as Inc.2 to keep the game the way he wanted it.

How come this downfall?

THE AKASHA CHRONICLE

Any action, as we know, starts with a thought. Before and beyond a thought is the thinker, the static. Thinking, postulating a game, is the “first condition of existence” (Ax. 11), and it means falling away from the “co-existence of static” (Ax. 25).

To understand Xenu’s game fully, we must begin with Xenu’s first postulate, with the thought that made *him* fall away from the co-existence of static and by which he created his existence and that’s a lot earlier than the hoovering incident 17 quadrillion years ago.

The story has become known through debriefing theta quanta in auditing sessions. Each theta quantum is an “eye witness” insofar as they record everything from the moment they are created. Any theta quantum contains two pieces of information: the postulate at the moment of its creation, i.e. the reason it was created, and the creator’s emotion at that moment. This information can be read off it.

Theta quanta feel invalidated by being misowned and looked at as “raw material” for thetans’ games. They want to be unmocked and be free again - static. But for reasons we already know they weren’t unmocked, and the longer they existed the more convenient it became to use them for all sorts of purposes - e.g. for storing knowledge in, building communication lines with or adding energy and power to activities. They became the akasha, prana and ch’i mentioned in the beginning chapter

of this book. In their totality they form the “akashic record”. Any datum you ever wanted to know about anything anywhere: ask *them*. They have it on file.

Yet they were never happy with that. They are waiting to be called off duty by their creators and be made to vanish. As all theta has the “built-in” tendency to be static, the moment it is placed somewhere the tension between being a somethingness and wishing to be a nothingness begins. This is the “charge” registering on the E-meter, the essential charge built into Xenu’s game (Ax. 45).

LUCIFER AND HIS DISCIPLES

The concept of using theta quanta came up about 25 quadrillion years ago. Xenu was the first to use energized theta in the form of minute quanta. It was his idea. Theta quanta mean space, communication, light, energy, life - a new games dimension, incomparable to what was known before. Xenu was a “lightbringer” (Latin: lucifer).

His first postulate was: “I’m here!”, and to define what “here” meant he used dimension points (which are theta quanta). An absolute novelty.

Everybody came to see what “here” looked like. To do so, they needed dimension points, too.

All of a sudden they had become part of a game. They found they were “here”, too. Everybody was suddenly “here and now”. A shared postulate. What a lovely thing to have in common, they thought. They didn’t know it was to be their trap.

And of course they didn’t ever unmock their theta quanta, because had they done so, they would have had neither space nor existence any more. And as beingness seemed more fun than non-beingness, a game more fun than no game, they left their theta quanta in the game and added to them and added to them and added to them.

It was a new experience. You agreed to having solid particles (Fac. 13) and - whew! - you had solid particles! It was something you could *have*. Very pleasant! Having something is so much more pleasant than having nothing. Solid theta quanta are so much more entertaining than just pure thought. Fascinating!

It wouldn’t have come to a bad end at all had Xenu not started his hoovering and re-distribution project 17 quadrillion years ago. This brought mest - at this stage purely mental - into a turbulent, enharmonic condition; it became disordered, “enturbulated”¹ and therefore un-dissolvable.

Mest as such is a fairly tolerable condition of existence, but enturbulated mest is infinitely worse, because it’s next to impossible to unmock. (By comparison, it’s hard enough to take an intact watch apart, but it’s near impossible to take a watch apart after a truck went over it.)

Before the hoovering incidents, mest wasn't durable. It was unstable. It didn't last. A thetan could simply withdraw his attention and the creation would vanish. Not that they did, but they could if they wanted to. No chance to control anything.

Enturbulated mest, however, was durable. It lasted. It made control possible. This is what Xenu wanted. Nobody else wanted this, though. So Xenu had to pretend there was a serious situation, a problem, and then find a "solution".

AN ENERGY PRESERVATION CONFERENCE

The mest game had been going on a good 5 quadrillion years, when Xenu, around 20 quadrillion years ago, called a meeting. Elron attended it (Hubbard), and some others.

Imagine, Xenu said, if people just kept on creating the way they do, with no-one cleaning up - what would that lead to! A great problem, no doubt. So one had better *preserve energy* and keep this create-create-create business down a bit.

The obvious solution, Xenu said, was to make mest durable. You trap theta quanta, Xenu said, and disengage them from their source, the thetan, by enturbulating them through a spinning motion. You command them to conform to basic geometrical patterns (reminiscent of crystal lattice structures or the geodesic domes of Buckminster Fuller³⁴). They mutually hold each other. They are forced together, can't return to their owners but want to. There is tension.

Postulates like "we are one", "we are all the same", "we are different from our owners" are implanted in the captured theta quanta. As well: "We must help".

Thus helping becomes more important than returning. Theta quanta become "self-determined", must be independent from their creators, must help them. More tension builds up. In the end you get a self-contained, nearly spherical energy field.

Now that energy is self-contained you don't have to keep creating it. Just tap it. Practical, isn't it? It's all done *for you* now!

These were Xenu's suggestions at his energy preservation conference.

Those attending the meeting were puzzled. What was Xenu on about? From the beginning of the mest creation game nobody had minded creating; in fact it was the whole point of the game! Neither did anyone think that creativity was a vice and scarcity a virtue. There was no problem.

Xenu knew that there was no problem. Therefore he had to pretend that there was one and convince people of it. And he succeeded. "Imagine", he said, "if this went *on forever!*" We needed limits, he said, fixed procedures. "Look at what I have worked out for you" and he presented to the attendees of the conference a model of his Energy-Field Production Unit containing the whole cycle described above. As he demonstrated

it (hooverspin-field), one stared at it attentively, lost one's theta quanta into it - and he had one. Now one was "convinced".

His model was an attention trap. As he demonstrated it, it did precisely what he was saying - it trapped the attention (theta quanta) of the attendees.

GAMES ALTERNATIVES

One alternative to Xenu's mest game, the game preceding it and still running parallel to it, is the "beingness game". It's based on being and knowing but doesn't involve viewpoint definition by theta energy interaction. Pure 8th dynamic. This way you fall away from static, too, but not very far. You keep your space a knowingness-space not a mest-space. You play thought games in the sense of selectively co-being but not co-acting. There are no communication "lines". No quanta are used. Every now and then you "un-think" your thoughts and rejoin static. A gentle undulation.

Xenu threw an ego-thought ("I'm here!") into this placid world, noisy and glaring like a rocket against the night sky. A far cry from co-being. Pure Ego!

It made you protest. "How would anyone dare . . .!" One must take up a position against that! To hell with serenity. And down you go. Lost your poise. End of undulation. Stuck in the game. The current games cycle is definitely "Xenu's Games Universe". All games within this universe - as they are based on theta quanta - are master-minded by Xenu.

Despite the fact that there are alternative Games Universes there seems to have been a need for this one, a need to experience both mental and physical mest. Everybody who joined, wanted to join. One cannot blame this on Xenu. Certainly, with all the implanting he did he made it the toughest game ever played, but those who complain may blame themselves. After all, it offers everybody an opportunity to undergo the experiences they consider necessary to experience - for the sole reason to have experienced them.

Well done, Xenu!

TWO CONTESTANTS

Xenu and Elron both understood the principle of unmocking by means of assigning correct authorship to a quantum (Ax. 29) but used this principle in opposing ways. Whereas Xenu worked towards misownership, condensation, solidification and ultimately total control, Elron championed assigning correct authorship, taking personal responsibility and ultimately attaining total freedom - which means rejoining static.

As soon as Elron had joined the game for real (after the conference) he became Xenu's senior games contestant.

This contest has not ended yet.

CHAPTER 4

Earlier than Atlantis

4.1 Twelve who are Thirteen

A THIRD CONTESTANT * GAMES NAMES * THE PHI PROJECT *
THE CONVERSION PROGRAM * TIMELESS CONCEPTS * YATRUS

At the end of the last chapter we spoke of Xenu and Elron as *the* two contestants in this mest game. Well, there is a third one.

He was well known to all and at the same time remained unheeded. His influence was so subtle that nobody noticed. He used the 8th dynamic, that of postulates, in contrast to Xenu who used the 7th dynamic, that of mental mest. This way both controlled their areas of influence on the lower five dynamics. Perhaps Xenu never realized how much his own game was modified by the 8th dynamic, by the concepts of others mingling with his own - particularly those of the third contestant in this game. His name is Yatrus.

Apart from Elron, Yatrus is one other thetan Xenu couldn't control. Not that Yatrus, like Elron, would play towards freedom certainly not! He played a suppressive game of his own within that of Xenu; it still runs. In the attempt to come to terms with Yatrus, Xenu staged two further large-scale implants after Inc.1. Of one, Inc.2, we have heard already, and roughly in the middle of that vast terra incognita of 4 quadrillion years between Inc. 1 and Inc.2, there is yet another one. Yatrus and this third implant, the "Middle Implant", are the subject of this chapter.

A THIRD CONTESTANT

Before the actual beginning of the mest quanta game, about 25 quadrillion years ago, there was something one might term the "conceptualizing game". Theta quanta didn't play a role yet. One "flashed concepts" at each other, or rather, one was these concepts. It felt like sitting in a hot-air balloon and floating through an electric storm - blackness above, blackness below, blackness all around, no orientation points, no shapes, no forms, but an incessant fireworks of lightning's flashing from all corners at once. A game of concepts, of what one could Be and Do and Have without anyone actually becoming serious about it and making it "real". This is what Xenu did by introducing theta quanta. He made it have consequences; he made it real.

A postulate, a concept, a thought - they are by nature unlimited in space. They do not contain energy, matter or time. They come as fast as they go (Ax. 11). And so, at the time we speak about, nothing lasted - but still, there were agreements and

disagreements about concepts, there were concept originators and concept followers. In a word, there were “thought vectors” - thoughts going in certain directions.

When Xenu originated and demonstrated his theta quanta concept, others voiced their opinions and comments. This way thought vectors were established. One was: “Those that aren’t as skilled in this game as others should have the opportunity to be taught. Let it be a fair game.” Another: “Whatever you do with your quanta, whatever you create - just make sure it’s aesthetic !” Elron’s was: “Above all, keep order!” And that of Yatrus: “See how far you can go with it.”

Yatrus’ postulate seems innocent enough, but it’s in fact so cunning that one might argue that Xenu’s game was actually run by Yatrus and not by Xenu himself.

To start with, “see how far you can go with it” contains the idea of unchecked expansion, of everybody expanding uncoordinatedly and eventually against each other; unlimited egotism and utter irresponsibility are implied. “Well, I just wanted to see how far I could go with it and as nobody stopped me . . .” - you see? No own responsibility. Egotism unlimited.

Most tricky of all is the following: the more someone takes a game to its limits and perhaps perverts it, the more someone strains a relationship and humiliates his partner, in a word, the more someone puts his *own* ideas in action without considering the effect it may have on others - the more he fulfills the postulate of Yatrus. Believing in doing his own thing he actually does *his* thing: His own ideas are modified by Yatrus’ games concept. Xenu himself fell for that, with his unlimited and uncoordinated production, solidification and implanting of theta quanta - let’s see how far we can go with it. Hubbard, too, by the way! Witness how he went over the top in running his church.

Any game, if played on the basis of that particular postulate, is really Yatrus’ game.

And so the whole mest creation game went out of hand. Before the mest game, in the “beingness game” (we spoke about it at the end of the last chapter), one blended in, one undulated between static and beingness, one wasn’t “important” - and now: the more ego the better. See how far you can go with it. End of undulation.

GAMES NAMES

The end of the last chapter demonstrated how the thetan incarnated as L.Ron Hubbard began to play his part in Xenu’s game long before he took his recently deceased Earth body. To avoid confusion, we have already once or twice called that “other Hubbard” by his games name Elron.

Many thetans, at least those who are causatively influencing this game, have “games names” for their identification. “Xenu” is one, “Elron” another, “Yatrus” a

third one. A games name is the vibrational pattern of the thetan's energy field put into sound. Games names are not restricted to the high and mighty only; indeed, quite a few auditors have found theirs, too - usually when they realized their personal games purpose. My games name is "elkin". Very useful for pseudonyms.

THE PHI PROJECT

Back to the narrative. The effects of Yatrus's games postulate were mainly felt *after* Inc.1, because before, one didn't easily experience the consequences of what one was doing since mest wasn't a problem yet. So let's briefly take stock of the situation after Incident 1, 4 quadrillion years ago: thetans had been implanted with tiny little masses, didn't notice them, carried on playing as if nothing had happened but discovered fairly soon that things appeared a trifle more solid than before and were difficult to un-make. By implanting these "tiny little masses" which were in fact prefabricated theta lumps, that is, theta quanta stolen from innumerable originators, Xenu had successfully blocked all attempts to undo theta creations. It wasn't any longer possible to uncreate them by a mere decision as one could before.

As long as there was a place to dump one's creations one didn't have to worry, really. Quite soon, though, the disorder became both noticeable and embarrassing. It isn't quite that thetans "ran out of space" at a given point - because space is limitless. The irksome part was rather that they, all-causative and powerful creators, found themselves unable to cause a change in their very own creations. This was against the order of things and cried out for some scheme of action.

To really un-create things it would have taken an understanding and the application of the philosophical principles laid down in the Axioms, yet it is doubtful that they were known then, in those days, in the explicit formulation Hubbard gave them. They were known implicitly at best - intuitively, as it were. Given the particularly complex conditions after Inc.1, this was completely inadequate for dissolving things. Instead, the solution found was an aesthetic one - to take those useless and undissolvable creations and give them shape and form. What best to do with all this rubbish? Why, turn it into art! And so the physical universe came to be made.

To start with, the physical universe was of course no less flimsy and transparent as the creations it was gradually fabricated from. It wasn't nearly as solid as it is today. Inc.1 furthered solidification, true, but it still took quadrillions of years until the suns, moons and stars appeared which we commonly associate with the word "universe".

We are going to refer to the creation of the physical universe as the "Phi Project". "Phi" is a Greek letter and Hubbard's convenient abbreviation for "physical universe" (Dn. Ax. 10). The Phi Project is part of the "Conversion Program" which we'll hear about in the next chapter. To design the Conversion Program and supervise its execution, the "Council of the Twelve" was formed. To the Twelve belong some of the thetans who had attended Xenu's "energy preservation conference" long before Inc.1, and some others. Certain fundamental features of the physical universe governing

the interrelation of particles - such as magnetism and gravity - one had actually to postulate; they didn't occur "by themselves". A huge mechanism was set up this way, lasting until the present. (It isn't quite clear yet if Elron was a member of the Twelve, an advisor to them or an executive of their plans. He seems to have had all three functions at various times.)

The Council still exists, actually. It was never dissolved. Some of its members are physically represented on Earth. The Twelve still have conscious control over their existence both inside and outside the mest universe. They consider themselves pure postulated beingnesses (8th dynamic) who simultaneously - by taking on viewpoints and from there extending and withdrawing theta quanta - operate on the level of mental mest (7th dynamic).

The Twelve, as management body of the Conversion Program, would have had to maintain their positions on a postulate level above this game in order to properly supervise it. Yet they didn't. They behaved like board members who show up once a year and spend the rest of the time with their hobbies. Result: no supervision of the Program.

The Middle Implant and Incident 2 could only happen because the Twelve were not on post. They weren't interested enough to prevent from above what was going to happen below.

THE CONVERSION PROGRAM

The Conversion Program consisted of a number of projects which eventually, in a very roundabout way, were to restore all misplaced theta quanta to their rightful owners. Participants in it were, and are, all thetans, collectively called "the life static" or "theta". *"The life static is engaged in a conquest of the physical Universe. The symbol for the Life Static in use hereafter is the Greek letter Theta. A fundamental operation of theta in surviving is bringing order to the chaos of the physical universe."* (Dn. Ax. 1, 7, 8, 9.)

To attain such order, the formation of the physical universe as assorted lumps of dead matter wasn't sufficient (the Phi Project of the section before). True enough, the mest universe provided a great playground. It was fun for thetans to go into a mountain, a desert or a waterfall, then withdraw and be outside again; it was exciting to create thunderstorms or avalanches, throw planets out of their course or make them crash against each other - but to attain the ultimate goal of making mest conscious of itself, of being composed of masses of minute theta quanta, and making them return to their individual owners, mest had to be endowed with life, organic life.

The project designed for this purpose we are going to refer to as "Lambda Project". It appears in Hubbard's work as the "*Dianetic Axioms*", which reflect fundamental agreements pertaining to organic life and to organisms. In the Dianetics Axioms, "life" is abbreviated by the Greek letter "lambda". *"A life organism is*

composed of matter and energy in space and time, animated by theta. Symbol: life organisms are going to be referred to by the Greek letter Lambda. Lambda is the intermediate step in the conquest of the physical universe.” (Dn. Ax. 11, 15.)

The purpose of the whole program in one sentence: *“Theta, via lambda, effects an evolution of mest.” (Dn. Ax. 17.)*

In short, the idea was to create a playing field (6th dynamic, phi), put life forms on it (5th dynamic, lambda), amongst them humans (4th dynamic), and then have thetans (7th dynamic, theta) use these to convert the chaos of the mest universe back to theta and dissolve it (static). Therefore we will refer to this program as the “Conversion Program”. Its formula: phi - lambda - theta.

The Conversion Program has one very obvious and a second less obvious shortcoming: firstly, it is designed to have too many intermediate steps before the actual result can occur, and secondly it has built into it a tendency to perpetuate itself, because: *“The effort of lambda is towards survival.” (Dn. Ax. 19.)* And this is precisely why it didn't work. We are still in the middle of this program. (Plus thetans like Yatrus fiddled with it and made it worse - we'll come to that in a moment.)

Understandably, Elron was aghast at the plan; he would have preferred the direct method of each thetan taking care of his own bits and pieces and that way undoing Xenu's trap (and later that of Yatrus). But it wasn't to be. The Conversion Program was put into action. Parallel to it Elron developed his own methods of redirecting theta quanta to their individual sources. Only in 1950, after the Twelve had to realize that the Conversion Program had failed, were these methods officially put to use on Earth. And so, theoretically at least, the conversion of phi and lambda to theta might finally take place - provided that auditing is done voluminously enough, that the number of participants is sufficiently great, that the technology is applied diligently, etc. Many ifs and buts. But perhaps Elron has a chance to succeed this time.

Before Inc.1 there were thetan associations of varying duration but with no consequences. One met, played and went. After Inc.1, when everybody was irreversibly connected with everybody else, only a long-term, closely controlled program had a chance to undo this super-complexity. A real product was wanted! Part of the trouble the Twelve were in was that they suffered from a chronic lack of information, didn't overview the game and therefore had no basis for decisions.

TIMELESS CONCEPTS

None of the fantasies which solidified after Inc.1 and surround us today as household objects were actually thought up after that incident. They had been there before, all of them, but now that they couldn't be undone any longer, they became embarrassingly real. One couldn't simply ignore them and so had to use them somehow. Our world today, with its trees, flowers, animals, houses, gardens, airplanes, factories, men, women and children, our world existed as concepts before Inc. 1, as a world of

thought, and it will continue to exist until these concepts have all been played through or are considered unnecessary and dropped. That, and only that, would truly be the end of the need to have a mest universe.

The mest universe exists because there was a need, a curiosity, a games desire to express thoughts as shapes and forms. This desire was (and is) shared by all thetans in this game, that's why they joined it. That Xenu cemented it in the end is, despite all its gruesome implications, only one particular feature of this game. Only when the desire to put thought into form has been fully satisfied, will there be no further need for a mest universe, be it made of mental or of physical mest.

Nothing you could see when you look around is really "new" conceptually, it's been there all along. There is no time to thought, therefore all concepts exist at the same time. Yet they are made real only "when their time has come" - for example in our future.

YATRUS

The Twelve, in supervising the Conversion Program, had to take something like "public opinion" into consideration - thetans, proud of their creative ideas, wanted to see them used in the big plan. One imagery in particular had entered the fantasies of the day - that of life forms. Even before Inc. 1 one thought of them, but now that things didn't dissolve any longer, permanent life forms were possible: self-organizing, self-learning automata that could be formed out of dumped theta creations and be powered and programmed by theta energy.

The thetan who really pushed this imagery was Yatrus. He managed to convince even Xenu of bodies being a good idea - demonstrated by the fact that "glass bodies" were used during Inc. 1 to place thetans in. Even then Yatrus had his unseen hand in the game. He was not a member of the Twelve but gained their trust sufficiently to mislead and betray them and thereby determine the course of the Conversion Program decisively.

Yatrus was the "thirteenth amongst the twelve", the traitor. Many mythical parables derive from that, mentioned not only in Christianity where Jesus has twelve disciples (makes thirteen) and the thirteenth is a traitor, but as well by Franz Bardon who speaks of a hierarchy of senior spiritual entities, the top echelon being twelve plus one master (makes thirteen), and by Rudolf Steiner who referring to the Vedas says that the fate of the world was determined by twelve Buddas sitting around Vishva Karman, their central master (thirteen again). The Icelandic Edda mentions twelve gods residing in Asgard with Odin, their senior (total thirteen), all of them but manifestations of an almighty All-God (static).

Significantly enough, solo-auditors who can recall the Council usually speak of "twelve or thirteen, not sure". This is a correct observation insofar as Yatrus was "somewhat" part of the Twelve but at the same time wasn't.

Subterfuges like this are typical of him. In contrast to Xenu, Yatrus always worked from the back of the stage. He never put himself in the limelight, he never went openly in opposition, he never attacked. He didn't implant thetans, he didn't stick theta lumps on thetans to control them. Instead he persuaded them, swamped their thinking with his own thoughts, cunningly twisted their purposes until they absorbed his whilst still thinking they were operating on their own.

When he was dealing with thetans, Yatrus used postulates and so operated on the 8th dynamic - one dynamic up from Xenu who used energy and so played on the 7th. (Yatrus did use theta energy, too, but only when it came to implanting Genetic Entities, not thetans. This was a lot later, though.) One of Yatrus' most outstanding characteristics is that he had absolutely no qualms about breaking each and every promise he ever made. He starts off with an outwardly friendly and winning approach, thus gaining the trust and agreement of his victim, proceeds to suck the life juice out of him, drops him like an empty shell and considers this perfectly alright- simply because what's good for oneself can't possibly be bad. See how far you can go.

Yatrus wouldn't even notice the condition of his victim, but would be genuinely surprised when accused of being reckless and irresponsible. Responsibility was no concept to him. "Do what you like" was his only law. He pretended love only to get his way. Xenu never even pretended love; he was a clearly visible, out-front enemy who used his catastrophic effects openly and calculatedly. In this respect he was reliable and predictable. Yatrus was neither of the two. Operating on the sly, using persuasion and treachery, he depletes one's havingness - anytime you think you have him by the scruff of his neck, you find your hands empty. Then as now he was difficult to deal with which shows in particular when one attempts to audit him.

To reduce their characteristics to two fundamental traits: 1. Xenu played an overt and openly destructive game; Yatrus worked on the sly. 2. Xenu installed secret little control monitors in the space of people to make them do what he wanted; Yatrus perverted the intention to help, inherent in all thetans, so that they would *destroy by helping*.

4.2 The Binding of Spirit and Soul

ONE PLUS ONE MAKES THREE * NEW TOYS FOR THETANS *
SURVIVAL WORRIES * SEXUALITY * PARADISE LOST *
CATCH YOURSELF A THETAN * BODY SERVANTS

Yatrus' goal was the control of lambda, of organic life; he eventually attained it by infiltrating and permeating Genetic Entities (the energy fields governing bodies) and by distorting the information they contained and adding his own. However, at the point on the time track where we have got to now - shortly after Inc. 1, with the Twelve all engaged in the Phi Project and the Lambda Project only slowly coming up - there is no sign of GEs yet. How they were constructed, tested and eventually mistreated by Yatrus is the subject of this chapter.

Yatrus used the confusion created by Xenu's Inc.1 to his advantage; quietly and steadily he worked on his private "Lambda Scenario" within the general Lambda Project. Whatever he did, it had to do with Lamba, with life energy. Some of the steps he undertook will be described now, in the chronological sequence they seem to have occurred in. That no time tags are attached to these incidents is simply due to lack of extensive cross-confirmation. The data you are going to read have only fairly recently been found (see chapter 6.3). And as long as an insufficient number of auditors have confirmed a specific type of incident as occurring within a certain time bracket, one cannot rightfully say that "63.2 billion years ago all snakes were purple and played mandolin". So please regard the following as single frames scattered over a film roll a few hundred miles long, and even these may become interpreted differently as more certainty and data accumulate.

ONE PLUS ONE MAKES THREE

To start with, Yatrus suggested that thetans get together in pairs, "give each other energy" and help each other to purify their energies" so that they might once again enter the state of "godliness" they had had before Inc. 1.

The Twelve were delighted by this suggestion. "Purifying energies" was very acceptable to them as it seemed to fall in line perfectly with the Conversion Program. But - Yatrus being Yatrus - there was some trickery involved there. One is that one had to obtain energy from another instead of simply generating it oneself. That way, energy was made to look scarce and therefore valuable; it contributed to thetans believing themselves lesser than energy. The second trick: by making thetans compare themselves with the angelic images they had seen in Xenu's Inc.1 and the pre-1 incidents, Yatrus simply and slyly used Xenu's imagery of gods and angels for his own purposes. And, third trick, by encouraging thetans to get together in pairs to purify each other he put the seed of a new idea into their minds: that of the 2nd dynamic.

The 2nd dynamic, in its early stages without bodies and later with bodies (5th dynamic), is Yatrus' special field of operation. "You and I Forever", "We are so Good, Clean and Pure that We shan't Ever Part" are postulates found at that early time, an ideology of "sweetness and light". Only much later, once bodies were added to this, did lust and sexual desire play a part, too. Twosomeness, love as an exchange of sweet vibrations, bodies, sex - it went in that sequence. Heaven according to Yatrus.

In one of the first ploys to promote the idea of a 2nd dynamic, two thetans formed an "eternal pact" and had it hallowed by Yatrus, their great inspirer and patron, by their taking a "shower of light" richly saturated with Yatrus' theta quanta. Each quantum carried the postulate "I Need You!". This way the eternal bond with a "cosmic mate" had become indispensable for one's survival as a thetan (which is an absolute paradox, but there you go).

After taking their shower, thetan A and thetan B made their energy fields ('theta bodies') overlap so as to form a third field, C, which consisted of the theta quanta of A and B in fairly equal proportions and was granted a life of its own. A 2nd dynamic creation! Naturally, it led to ownership problems and unending quarrels, because one couldn't manage to dissolve it any more and so it stayed in existence. These "thetan offspring's" were to form the raw material for Yatrus' fabrication of GEs a long time later.

NEW TOYS FOR THETANS

The Twelve were unsuspecting. Responsible thetans, observing what went on, had handed in their reports and notes of concern, but to no avail. Yatrus had pulled the wool over the eyes of the Twelve. They wouldn't listen to anyone else after he had offered his help. About 2.7 quadrillion years ago the Twelve had the first Genetic Entity prototypes built. One used theta quanta as building material. So the dumped creations of pre-Inc. 1 times were put to twofold use: to build both the physical universe and the life units populating it. One collected them in the now traditional way of 1. hoovering them up, 2. imparting information to them whilst spinning them around, 3. storage or immediate use. (Xenu obviously had become a "good example"!) The information imparted on GEs during the spinning step consisted of two parts: one, to maintain the ideal form and function of a specific body type; two, to make it survive under all circumstances.

Immediately after they were released they became fair game to a few entertainment-hungry thetans who engaged in all sorts of rough horseplay with them, threw them about and distorted them with their energy beams, "blanketed" them with energy sheets, tried to own and run them and generally did everything with them that wasn't part of their program. The lesson the GEs learned during this time was that thetans are bad news for GEs. Mistrust had been established.

Soon after, body prototypes were put on the market. They weren't literally "clay" as Genesis has it, but consisted of condensed yet still transparent theta energy.

They had definite shapes - fairly human actually. In contrast, the GEs animating them appeared rather amorphous.

Bodies suffered the same fate as GEs. The ruffians and rowdies amongst the thetans thought it so much fun to throw them about, mutilate them, wreck them and see to it that all efforts of the GE to run a body was frustrated - it was ever so entertaining! Modern car engineers running crash tests on dummies have about as much feeling for these dummies as those thetans back then had for real bodies. (Perhaps they are the identical thetans still busy finding out “how far you can go with it” !)

Some thetans did not give any more attention and care to this type of creation than to their pre-Inc.1 theta creations. Whether one was dealing with luminous space structures made purely of mental mest, with GEs or with bodies - they are all made of theta quanta after all, so do with them what you like, why worry! Even today body crashing is considered fun as can be seen in dramatizations like Tom & Jerry cartoons where cat and mouse cause a dozen deaths for each other and still come out unscathed. In a way this reflects the times we are describing here.

These were hard times for GEs as one can imagine. In the end, it was they who had to do the repairing. Up to this day this information is available to them through the GE Pool. “Never Trust a Thetan” , they thought.

SURVIVAL WORRIES

We have now arrived at about 2.5 quadrillion years ago. The time bracket from 2.5 to 2 quadrillion years ago is decisive for the events to come later, because it is then that Yatruss was asked by the Twelve to take full control of the Lambda Project. (Lambda stands for Life, to remind you.) He knew that GEs were built to be controlled by thetans; all he had to do was to turn the vector around - and make thetans be controlled by GEs !

He hoovered up existing GEs and saturated them with images of plants, landscapes, animals and human bodies. He impressed “Mother Nature” on them. He never implanted thetans but certainly GEs. Here is how he did it: there is a tube, a tunnel, something like a linear accelerator; GEs are sucked through this tunnel in a spiraling motion at incredibly high speed, they pass through a fine layer of Yatruss theta quanta loaded with pictures and, equally important, postulates like “We are All One” or “Only United We Survive” - which naturally served as a stable datum at a moment of maximum confusion. These postulates stuck well.

The essential GE idea of “Must Survive!” backfired in that it rubbed off on thetans, too. Because after all, GEs are made of recycled and mixed-up theta quanta, and, as a result of Inc.1, all thetans were on an automatic and compulsive phone-link with each other. “Must Survive!” therefore started to permeate all minds. It became the new ideology - something unthought of so far. Why would a thetan, the immortal source of life, worry about survival? Never mind, this is the time when he started to do so. Scarcity was now introduced. “Must Survive!” implies scarcity as well as a time

concept, a future. One had to preserve, protect, be careful and economical. No further creations “just for fun”. Tightness instead.

SEXUALITY

Up to this point, there hadn't been any sexuality. Bodies had been ivory-pale, sexless, elf-like. Thetans demanded them faster than they were produced. (Yatrus who had a monopoly on them, kept production at a low rate.) High demand, slow supply - what to do? Bright idea, proposed to the Twelve by Yatrus: multiplication through sexual procreation. This made it unnecessary for the Twelve to decide on anything and relieved them no end. No project had been planned for this at all.

Up to this point GEs had been something like jelly-fish floating and drifting in lukewarm water. They were homogeneous, as similar as one egg to the next, and very bored. No games with each other, only enforced ones like running bodies in which thetans could have “fun”. by thetans. Yatrus suggested to them that they should differentiate within themselves and have two poles. That way they would be able to procreate and have offspring's - because “Life is only Possible through Duality” .

With this Yatrus took extreme advantage of a principle Xenu himself had used way back at the beginning of this whole game, when theta quanta were separated from their originators. Even without that, duality is a primal experience for any thetan at the moment he drops out from the co-existence of static.

True to his motto, Yatrus just went to see how far one could go with this. He had each GE form two poles, one at either end, and so two chakras appeared: the first and the seventh (crotch and crown). Between them an energy flow occurred, a flow of life force (kundalini), which of course Yatrus graciously provided. Since, Yatrus “owns” life force. It's his monopoly. Anyone doing chakra meditation and getting the energy manifestations typical of it, has got in contact with Yatrus' Lambda Scenario. The easier and therefore more common way, though, to get a “kundalini hit” is by means of the sex act. One might say that orgasm is a tribute to Yatrus. The GE likes this, of course; to it, sex means life force, expansion, power over thetans.

(Note that the two-pole principle is not unknown to biology. The forming of an embryo is not a mechanical process but an electromagnetical one. After the sperm has entered the egg, two poles form on either side of the egg. The electrical charge generated between them provides the power needed to start the force fields needed for cell subdivision and multiplication - the growth process ³⁵.)

PARADISE LOST

In their sexless state bodies had been fairly transparent (although to thetans they felt as solid as real flesh would feel to us). Yet with the introduction of sexuality the physical angel-like quality of bodies had to be sacrificed. Out of the original “standard

body”, two versions were modeled. (Genesis again: God forming Eve out of Adam’s rib.)

Bodies grew up and stayed at an optimum age, somewhere between 18 and 25 years old (by today’s standards). Their maintenance circuits were tuned to keep them going forever, unless they died by accident. Before the advent of pregnancy and birth, sex was seen as mere fun with no consequences. Any kind of hetero-, homo- and bisexual sex acts in any extreme of variation were thoroughly tested out. No real flesh and bones yet, for sure, but real enough to have experiences and make them stick. The GE began to build its corresponding banks - and thetans did, too. Anything Yatus would suggest would be stored by both banks, by thetans and GEs.

This attitude of “sex with no consequences”, sexual enjoyment of a body with no unpleasant after-effects such as pregnancy and birth is broadly dramatized in the playboy and playgirl fantasies not only of modern America, a dramatization resulting in abortions and men running away from their pregnant women because “we didn’t mean that to happen!”

The new system of sexuality and procreation through children had its disadvantages. “Paradise areas” where resources such as fruits and nuts abounded naturally and where the climate was pleasant, soon became overpopulated. As the GE/body units expanded towards the edges of such areas, they experienced hunger and had to work in order to exchange with the environment so as to provide food and shelter for the bodies they were responsible for. But as GEs weren’t programmed for that, they suddenly *needed* thetans to manage them! The GEs’ self-sufficiency was lost.

This was a new stage in Yatus’ scenario: to make GEs need thetans. It resulted in plenty of accidents and deaths because of the high-risk attitude and carelessness of thetans. But thanks to the new reproduction method (sexuality) there was no shortage of them. They provided nice sensations, and one didn’t really need them. So it seemed alright to waste them.

CATCH YOURSELF A THETAN

The GEs selected nice pretty bodies and attracted strong powerful thetans by signaling willingness to “cohabit”; at the same time they withdrew, thus making the thetan be interested and reach for them. The GEs would yield only if sufficient admiration was given. This way, by the thetans throwing admiration particles (theta quanta) all over the body of their choice, a bond was established between thetan, GE and body. (Perhaps we should speak of the GE as “she” - like in Mother Nature - and of the thetan as “he” to keep us from getting mixed up in this text.)

Thetans at that stage still strongly distinguished between GE and body. Their games were with the GE; the body was only considered a vehicle. As a next step, a control pattern consisting of seven energy modules was stamped into the GE whilst a thetan was “riding” it. Today, these modules are known as “chakras”. The stamping

was done through the thetan's energy body, from behind. Thetan and GE were now closely tuned to each other, closer than ever before. An interface like that between computer and printer had been installed. This went along with subliminal suggestions like "You and I Forever", "Never Alone Again", etc. They became hooked up with each other on the basis of mutual "must have" postulates. Not all thetans and GEs got stamped, but it spread through copying.

In brief: the GE attracted a thetan, he "blanketed" her (wrapped himself around her like a blanket), then the chakra-stamp, then compulsive togetherness. From now on, when a "stamped thetan" decided to own a GE, the GE in fact owned him. The GEs, of course, loved it: control of thetans, revenge.

Yatrus kept whipping up emotions by inciting the GEs to "get even", "become thetans, too" and "be greater than them". The GEs fell for his sweet talk until they found out that they had in no way become the masters of thetans but were instead (through the chakras) misused as go-betweens, as the carriers of Yatrus' commands to other thetans. Yet they obeyed for fear of getting "atomized" (Yatrus' constant threat to disobedient GEs), that is, to get sucked up, disintegrated, be taken out of the game with no identity - the worst that could happen to any piece of theta, however tiny.

The longer thetans were fed Yatrus' concepts through the chakras, the more they introverted on the subject of energy. Energy became holy, valuable, it existed in its own right. That one might possibly produce it oneself was out of the question, was sacrilegious; instead one partook of the "all-prevalent abundance of life force", drank from it, swam in it - and felt "one with creation". Yatrus, the dictator of GEs ("We are but his Slaves"), was now even senior to the thetans themselves. Capable of reaching thetans via their GEs he had come to the same result as Xenu but on a different route.

BODY SERVANTS

The next step in the plot led up to thetans pitying bodies and culminated in the line: "You must help those bodies!" This ended the times when smashing bodies was good fun. Playgrounds were established where you smashed bodies according to certain rules and then - this is the game - healed them as fast as you could. A thetan-GE team would be matched against another thetan-GE team. Who is the fastest, who does it the best?

The trick was that the thetan had to take the viewpoint of the GE to help her do the healing. When he did so, the concept of "oh, that poor body!" was flashed to him. After repeated exposure to this thetans came to believe that they had committed an overt act; they got the impression that smashing bodies was a misdeed, began to feel sympathy with bodies and considered them a scarcity which needed preserving well. With this ideology well installed, Yatrus - via the GEs - dominated the game even more. Instead of being their masters, thetans had become servants of bodies.

Any quarrel within a thetan/GE team as to how one should heal a certain body, was handled by asking Yatus personally. “When Your Thetan doesn’t Listen, Ask Yatus”, was the lesson the GEs learned this way; and they began to accept him as *the* great healer. He had once again gained their trust. (“Iatr”, by the way, means “healer” in Greek.)

4.3 Setting Cosmic Law

TWO RIVALS * OLD ABILITIES NEWLY IMPLANTED *
HOW TO IMPLANT * CROSSED-OVER PURPOSES *
A SECOND SWITCHBOARD * COSMIC LAW *
A LESSON IN BASIC GEOMETRY

TWO RIVALS

The Middle Implant (“Clearing Course implant” or “CC” in Hubbard’s terminology) occurred roughly 1.5 quadrillion years ago. By the same comparison we used before (one million years being one millimeter), it would be as far away as 1500 km from where you are whilst reading these lines. It is the first implant ever done on the *combination* of thetans and GEs and had the effect of sealing the “binding of spirit and soul”, approximated already by Yatrus’ devious plans, for all time. After it, exteriorization became harder and harder.

Strategically speaking it is the last stage of Yatrus’s Lambda Scenario; nevertheless it was Xenu, the master-implanter, who executed it. To the Twelve it was sold as an “Educational Project” and they granted permission.

Before it began, huge lightshows projected images of god against the sky; the public relations pitch made it out to be something secret and religious. (Definitely Xenu’s handwriting!) One was supposed to be reminded of things long forgotten, and be let in on deep mystical truths. Yatrus, clad like a bishop and holding a crosier, gave fiery speeches to GEs impressing on them that without thetans they’d continue being nobodies forever and that this was their one chance in eternity to be safe and taken care of by strong and responsible thetans. Rumor had it that all GEs and thetans who participated were going to be interconnected through a vast network and “Unity” was going to be achieved. All were eager to participate! The oftener you had experienced it, the better, but ten times was the limit. And don’t jump the queue, please!

Space stations from Andromeda appeared in many places to administer this “Initiation to Truth and Unity”. The implant didn’t take long to do. You could service large numbers of thetans within a short time.

Implant stations from Andromeda - now that’s a sure sign that Xenu was behind it. His stronghold, as auditors found out repeatedly, was always somewhere in the Andromeda nebula. Implanting thetans is typical of Xenu; Yatrus would restrict himself to GEs. Yatrus would coax, persuade and flatter to bend people his way; Xenu liked quick direct action: “Just slam some masses on them, and that’s that!” He wouldn’t ever have bothered using GEs for control purposes.

That Xenu enters the scene at this point suggests that there must have been some close cooperation between him and Yatrus. Or some great jealousy perhaps? After all, both had come a long way in their control of thetans. Did Xenu want to keep this upstart

from growing too big and powerful? Did he wish to keep a hand in on a game he himself had started but which seemed to be usurped by Yatrus?

No definite answer can be given, yet some events further in the future do suggest that there was rivalry between the two. Xenu saw it necessary to emphasize his supremacy over Yatrus more than once - but actually didn't stand a chance. Because what remedy is there against a thetan whose only motto is "see how far you can go with it"? The harder you try to beat him the more he'll be the winner!

As an aside - mythologically, traces of Xenu and Yatrus can be found all over. Xenu, the script writer of a show called "One God & His Angels", Xenu, the cold, intellectual "Light Bringer" reappeared in the cults of Mithras, Lucifer, Apollo, and in the dictatorial One God of the old testament; his counterpart, Yatrus, one finds symbolized as passionate Ahriman, the dark, lustful god of the old Persians, as Baal, as the hairy, cleft-footed Pan of the Greeks, as Dionysus. The images of both were blended and became the Devil, Satan, or Baphomet, the occultists' hellish master of evil demons, depicted as goat-headed, hairy, with female breasts and male genitals, a hermaphrodite. Whether pope or priest, emperor or king - each dramatizes either Xenu or Yatrus or a combination of both. The pair never ceased to inspire artists and writers; they even appear as caricatures like for example Shir Khan (Xenu) and King Louis (Yatrus) in Disney's "Jungle Book".

OLD ABILITIES NEWLY IMPLANTED

How solid their machinery actually was (space ships, implant implements, etc.) is difficult to tell, because looking at things with the perceptiveness people had back then, they appeared just as solid as our world to us - although, were we confronted with the objects of those days at our current level of perception, we might not even notice them. Too transparent for the naked eye.

Rolling chambers moved along horizontally and took you through an endless corridor with screens left and right. Then zap - zap - zap, concepts flashed across. (For technicians: it was done on the basis of scalar waves, the man-made equivalent to telepathy.)

One peculiar feature of this implant is the re-occurrence of a light - perhaps to restimulate the "waves of light" of Inc. 1. This is significant insofar as many religious and esoteric cults since indulge in worshipping light phenomena. They believe that light is holy. Those who came out the other end were overawed and hushed and went right around the corner to line up for the next round. They felt like a big brotherhood on the basis of "We all Know the Same". Thetans and GEs all knew the same now. The GEs were ever so chuffed about finally being equal. They had been let in on the same secrets as big thetans, they were "As Good as a Thetan" now - "emancipated".

Not all GEs looked at the results of the Middle Implant as favorably as that. Some experienced brutality and overwhelm and felt that a thetan had been forced on

them and actually *into* them - into their “heads” ! It seems that this is the time when the thetan became firmly soldered into the 6th chakra (forehead, “third eye”), began to view the world from there and gradually un-learned to exteriorize.

The Middle Implant consisted of a number of sections, clearly set off against each other by content and purpose. It is Hubbard’s great merit to have found the complete set of implant commands; they cover a good 25 typewritten pages. The commands quite cleverly refer to abilities thetans and GEs had anyway, each in his own way; therefore they sound perfectly innocent, like “*to be nobody - to be everybody*”, “*to be myself - to be others*”, “*to do much - to do little*”, “*to have all - to have none*”, “*to stay back - to stay forward*”, “*to be an animal - to be animals*”, etc. These are basic theta abilities; nobody hearing them as commands would suspect any evil.

HOW TO IMPLANT

The trick is that implanting an ability, innocent as it may appear, naturally leads to a disability. To give an example of the present: take someone who loves swimming. Beat him unconscious and have a tape play “I love swimming” all the while. The concept of “I love swimming” is now associated with pain and unconsciousness. To make double sure you now take the opposing concept, too, strap your victim back down in the chair, beat him unconscious and have the tape play “I hate swimming”. Now a polarity between two intentions has been established, and both ends of it are associated with pain and unconsciousness. Next time the victim goes swimming he will experience pain and a degree of unconsciousness; even at the thought of swimming he will experience this - and forever after will withdraw from the subject of swimming and live in the Sahara desert.

As soon as he thinks of one goal he can’t help thinking of the counter-goal; indecision, pain and unconsciousness set in; he feels massy. The problem arising out of two opposing goals creates a mass - so we are dealing with the implanted variety of a Goals Problem Mass or GPM.

The Middle Implant was by no means as brutal as the example just given may suggest, since bodies were not mistreated at all. They didn’t even play a part in this implant. It was just attended by thetan and GE; two joint energy fields walking hand in hand, as it were. This implant contained no coercion, instead it aroused interest and curiosity; one felt persuaded to participate. The working principle of it wasn’t violence but “plus-randomity”, a Hubbardism meaning that more went on per time unit than one was able to predict. One was hit by unexpected things from unexpected angles at an unexpected rate. This of course made one attempt to either hold on to something that was withdrawing too fast or to hold off something that was intruding too fast. By this intense use of one’s attention units, one’s theta quanta, one of course created ridges with mental image pictures on them. One duplicated the concepts one was exposed to not merely on a postulate level but additionally by creating a mass at the moment of receiving these concepts.

Therefore, at any later time when one had a thought which faintly resembled one of the Middle Implant concepts, one would to some degree re-create the mass originally created during the incident itself - and feel appropriately encumbered, disabled, slowed down, massy. And as the implanted GPMs covered the entire range of concepts a thetan would conceivably concern himself with, it was to have quite an effect.

CROSSED-OVER PURPOSES

The whole idea of this implant was to make it unpleasant and undesirable for thetans to execute their most basic abilities regarding the control of matter, energy, space, time and theta, i.e. their power to intend and create. Simultaneously the same limitations were set for the GE, because thetan and GE experienced the same implant jointly.

Not only did the Middle Implant result in disability for thetan and GE but as well in a crossing over of disabilities and abilities. Some commands - for example "to be an animal" - would more commonly apply to a GE rather than a thetan, but as *both* had it now, the thetan would begin "wearing the hat of the GE and vice versa. A given situation would be handled by both of them and they would get in each other's way. Through the implant the two became reactively identified with each other in terms of their jobs. Either of them would tend to do the job of the other as well as his own and not even notice. Result: confusion, friction, struggle, indecision.

Thetan and GE had become a problem to each other, and the more they would try to resolve it the deeper they would get into it. This of course put them on a downward spiral which took us to where we stand today - most people are firmly soldered into their bodies and the thetan, unaware of himself, follows the dictate of the GE. Yatus has won.

A SECOND SWITCHBOARD

At the time of the implant, it was seen to be a grand thing. One was part of a network now ! Thetans and GEs could go different ways after the implant and yet be in communication at any time. Each thetan could be in communication with each other thetan, each GE with each other GE. This was fantastic! One was "more" now than before. More connections, more power, more games. Before, one was a nobody; now that one could be on everybody's communication lines, one was somebody.

Glorious as it might have appeared to them - the facts were rather sobering. Neither did anyone remember that before Inc.1 they could do that sort of communication anyway, nor did the embarrassing circumstance bother anyone that now, after the Middle Implant, one couldn't switch oneself *out* of the network any longer.

It is true that thetans and GEs could use the network as much as they liked - or *had* to! - but they couldn't get on top of it. The only one able to do that, the only one

able to enter commands into the network from outside (via the GEs) and thereby whisper his secret insinuations into everybody's ears simultaneously, was Yatrus.

A second switchboard was installed. (With Inc. 1 the first one had been built.)

COSMIC LAW

Of particular significance is the implant section called "Confusion GPM". A sample: "*Creating to destroy the Now - destroying to create the Now*", "*creating to destroy Time - destroying to create Time*". And so on, all the way through the concepts of matter, energy, space, time, life, existence, etc. Dozens of commands. Result: a philosophy of "do! - do! - do!" Never mind creating or destroying, as long as you *do* something! How to resolve a problem? Create or destroy! No middle way.

Ever since, creation and destruction were felt to be eternally linked. Creation and destruction of mest came to be seen as the basis of life itself - as if one couldn't just create life out of nothing and make it vanish into nothing, standard feats before Incident 1.

As a result, phi, lambda and theta formed a closed system - interactive, yes, but with no escape from it. Mest, the GE and thetans were firmly welded up with each other. Matter, energy, space and time came to be seen as pre-existing. Life and death were considered to be based on the polarity between creation and destruction. These are the "eternal opposites" considered "cosmic law" by some esoteric schools - including not only psychology where it is taught that the mind is the product of matter as well as physics where theories on energy preservation and conversion are preached (but where one hears nothing about energy creation and un-creation) and where a "Big Bang" is believed to be the cause of the cosmos. The thetan, as source of life, has successfully been pushed into the background, into obscurity. His creation has gained a life of its own, and he, the creator, has come to feel subservient to the effects he once created himself.

A LESSON IN BASIC GEOMETRY

Regarding the subject of mest, the Middle Implant has more in store yet. In its last section, called the "Objects", one is shown basic geometrical forms, first as two-dimensional outlines, then as three-dimensional bodies. First they rush away from one, then they rush in on one. The exposure is extremely brief. As one tended to hold them back before they rushed off (in order to have a better look at them) and hold them off when they moved in (as they seemed to crush one), one made a mental image picture of them twice. Thus an identical patterning for GE and thetan alike concerning certain geometrical principles was created.

The Objects were gleaming, bright, luminiferous, powerful, promising, significant, majestic; you wanted to grab them, own them. A deep, unearthly hum

accompanied their apparition, the hum of boundless energy. (Perhaps it was then that the Aum, the “ sound that keeps the universe together” , was installed in the mind.)

Impressive as they appeared to be, the Objects were actually old stuff; they were based on constructional principles of the times way before Inc. 1, originally demonstrated by Xenu at his “ Energy Preservation Conference” . Not even to the GEs they were news, really. They recognized the Objects as familiar shapes, because after all GEs consisted of theta quanta which originally, before Inc.1, had been part of theta creations. After having been dumped, these creations were hoovered up to be raw materials first for the mest universe and later for the GEs. And that’s why GEs, at the sight of the Objects, were reminded of something important. The Objects were “ home” to the GE. They gave them the pleasant recall of having been something special and made them feel closely related to thetans. An inner bond between the two was re-established through the exposure of the Objects.

Once they were agreed upon, the Objects enforced certain constructional principles, expressed for example as “ Euclidean geometry” . One doesn’t only find them in architecture and engineering but as well in the basic building plans of rocks and minerals, in the actual phi structure of the universe - indicating again that they date back to pre-1 times. They are very old agreements regarding the structure of energy and matter.

Lambda, however, does not always correspond to their pattern. Organic tissue, i.e. the stuff the GEs were governing, rarely grows geometrically. They rather align with “ fractals” and the corresponding formulas. Recently mathematicians made it possible to create “ organic” forms on the computer screen. Fractal formulas seem to come very close to the actual GE programs. Perhaps the people who discovered them only re-discovered them! Are they the same people who designed the original GE programs some 2.5 quadrillion years ago? Perhaps. Why I’m bringing this up here is that Xenu seems to have wanted to superimpose his own non-organic geometrical principles on the fractal-type programs of the GE. And why? Because Yatrus was getting too powerful. Rivalry again.

The Objects had one other important and far-reaching consequence. Two types are shown: first the hollow ones, then the solid ones. In contrast to the luminous and inviting hollow ones the solids are presented as dark and mysterious. They feel threatening. Relief is felt when they go off, menace when they come in. This is how the opposing principles of black and white were laid into the mind which in later times, found their expression as the two varieties of magic. And it was the strife between wizards and black ones which ultimately brought the culture called “ Atlantis” to its fall.

4.4 A New Culture

YATRUS' BIO-LAB * SIGNS OF DECLINE * OUR ATLANTEAN HERITAGE

The conjoining of Thetans, GEs and bodies, cemented by the concepts and pictures of the Middle Implant, manifested itself in a new life pattern, in a new culture which evolved within the trillenia to come. Its specific imagery and style - beautiful bodies, paradisaical landscapes, fairy gardens with gnomes and elves, gleaming castles, fair knights in love with equally fair ladies, communication by telepathy, conversing with animals and plants, crystal healing, battles between black and white wizards, energy supplies drawn straight from quartz blocks, etc. - this imagery was not implanted but occurred as a consequence of the implant, making the best of it, as it were.

Today this culture is referred to as "Atlantis". It wasn't located anywhere *on* this planet, no - the *whole* of Earth was Atlantis. It lasted a very long time, possibly until roughly 200 million years ago when a split began to run through its single super-continent, perhaps due to oversized energy-experimentation's which changed the angle of the Earth's axis. (This is what Franz Bardon reads in the akasha chronicle¹⁰.) Considering that even with our mild attempts of today we are doing quite well when it comes to producing man-made earthquakes, one may rightfully assume that they did a lot better back then¹⁹! Be this as it may, geologists assume that with this split the continental drift started, and as it widened, the Atlantic Ocean was formed²².

Atlantean imagery is so deeply ingrained in the memories of man (and his GE) that it came to be dramatized only recently - a few thousand years ago - in the pyramid cultures surrounding the Atlantic Ocean. Man had just recovered from the nuclear winter of Inc.2 and worked his way up to halfways civilized standards - and what did he do as the first thing if not dramatize his glorious past, the time long before the cataclysm.

YATRUS'S BIO-LAB

Two types of thetans populated Atlantis: those who had gone through the Middle Implant and those who hadn't. (Not *all* thetans, like in case of Inc.1, had had it.) Those who hadn't were still in great command of their spiritual abilities; they could change the shape of their bodies, create illusions visible by anyone or create objects out of thin air. They were cause over life and cause over mest (a state Hubbard calls Cleared Theta Clear"). At about 750 trillion years ago (half way between the Middle Implant and now), Atlantis seems to have reached its peak.

Because its culture was founded on GPMs and because thetans were still very powerful, good and evil in the extreme existed side by side: black and white magic, spiritual healing and horrifying biological experiments, constructive and destructive

engineering. In the end Atlantis broke down ethically. The state of Cleared Theta Clear, fairly common in the beginning stages of its culture, was misused for evil purposes and eventually vanished.

Earth was the favorite laboratory of Yatrus. Here he experimented with the now filmy amalgamated thetan-GE unit. His attitude was simple: "All Thetans are Bodies". He didn't care about thetans at all, his main point of interest was finding out what one could turn a body into and how much one could distort the programs of the GE with the body still functioning. One particular outgrowth of this were man/animal chimeras and other biological and zoological impossibilities. (Look at the sphinx, at Egyptian murals and Aztec relief's and you get the idea.) That thetans - no longer being able to exteriorize - were sometimes locked up inside these abominations, was just part of the fun.

Yatrus attempted to expand his Lambda Scenario (i.e. his biological laboratory) across the whole galaxy and further. Andromeda however, our next-door galaxy, was against it; Typical Xenu: he didn't like body experiments. Of course, even there they walked about in bodies, but Xenu didn't want to know of any particular experiments and refinements" in true Yatrus style. But just as Yatrus's body concepts couldn't be kept from permeating across into Andromeda, Xenu's implanting concepts found their way to this galaxy, and both took from the other what they considered

SIGNS OF DECLINE

At a much later stage, around 4 billion years ago, things had become almost as real and solid as we are used to them today. Planets were planets and people were people. Earth was the center of the already corrupt Atlantis culture. Other planets had been expanded to, conquered, given the Atlantean magic, sex and drugs civilization, and were either populated or depopulated by means of biological experiments.

Sex, drugs and violence were not an invention of the Incident 2 implanters, no - those implant designers drew their inspiration from decaying Atlantis and simply implanted what was around them. There were high beings, paragons of serenity, wisdom and justice, there were sadists of unspeakable brutality, there was erotic sweetness beyond description and harder pornography than any video shop on Earth today would dare to offer. It all went into the 36-day implant of Inc.2.

Drugs in fact played a rather large role in Atlantean times, because they were a sure way to undo the enforced tie with ones GE, permitted one to go exterior and made one feel as free and powerful as one was before the Middle Implant. And for the same reason they are used at present.

Life had higher highs and lower lows than today but it seems that people didn't take death as seriously as today. Despite the impact of the Middle Implant there was spiritual awareness beyond what's currently imaginable on Earth. And there was abundance: abundance of life, of death, of bodies, of food - and of energy. "Free

energy” in terms of Tesla principles was certainly not a problem then. This is perhaps the most significant difference between Earth before Inc.2 and after. Before, there was abundance of all, of the good and the bad alike; since, there has been scarcity. And the longer time goes on, the more scarcity there is, particularly regarding energy. Due to Inc.2 the number of bodies on this planet are construed to be a problem, providing food and housing for them is construed to be a problem, death is construed to be a problem. And energy is construed to be the biggest problem of them all.

Some billions of years closer to the present and due to Yatrus’s persistent experimentation’s, body types had diversified and races had formed. On Earth they were mostly of light Caucasian complexion whereas those of other planets in the galaxy looked different.

People increasingly turned away from the white magicians who spoke of forgiving, loving, undoing the bad deeds of one’s past, uncreating and dissolving mest, etc. They were considered great bores. The Conversion Program was not fashionable for the simple reason that thetans preferred a good and solid somethingness to a flighty nothingness. And so, at this comparatively late stage of Atlantis, people had degraded themselves to loving black energy masses more than light ones - because black masses were more solid. All that white magicians had in mind was purifying one, and one left them with less than what one started out with; black magicians on the other hand added masses to one; they offered more ! And eventually we find dark temples with black entities lurking in the corners, chorales containing obscenities, black Masses in Catholic style. They didn’t use incense, they were high on real dope. And they didn’t eat their god figuratively to feel united with him, but for real. They tore up his body, ate his limbs raw and drank his blood. The white wizards stood no chance against such delights.

In more recent times, like within the last few hundred million years, no fundamental changes occurred. Interesting with regard to the transports during Inc.2 (thetans in ice blocks) are their fore-runners: space transports where one would deep-freeze bodies or preserve them in alcohol - both of which gave the GE a problem because the bodies were neither dead nor alive, so the GE could neither leave them nor re-animate them. As well one ought to mention the times when centaurs and other chimera dominated Earth and enforced sex on humanoids (with no offspring but again giving a problem to the human GE). Later came the gorilla invaders whose males enforced their sexuality on Earth women with unimaginable brutality. In contrast to the centaurs the gorillas did produce offspring, and perhaps this is the reason why some anthropologists claim that man’s ancestors were monkeys or that Africa was the cradle of humanity, and why the film “King Kong” is an everlasting success.

About 90 million years ago huge numbers of GEs were caught by extraterrestrial invaders; they were evacuated, frozen and kept. No evil intentions were connected with this; it was done to preserve life forms specific to Earth when some global catastrophe was threatening. In fact, some of these “shelved” GEs seem to have been used for re-population programs after Inc.2. Perhaps Inc.2 was the global catastrophe and someone foresaw it. (What actually occurred couldn’t be revealed by the “informant”, one of the

evacuated GEs, because she hadn't been here between 90 and 70 million years ago, i.e. she was brought back here after Inc.2.)

OUR ATLANTEAN HERITAGE

Before Incident 2, Earth was a very "Yatruscan" place; it had a "body culture" characterized by sex, drugs, biological experimentation and an enjoyment of voluptuous sensuality as well as bloodcurdling cruelty. The "machine & military culture" so typical for Earth since Inc.2 is definitely a "Xenian" feature.

Let us briefly summarize Atlantis and see what we have inherited from it, what traces of it can be found in modern life. Parallel to the sexual perversions already mentioned, there was a Great Mother cult with moon and fertility rites, female priest hoods and matriarchal political units - all very foreign to Xenu's way of thinking. In our times, druids, witches and shamans still continue this line; small wonder that they were severely suppressed by Xenu's descendants, be they Roman soldiers, Spanish inquisitors or British colonial officers.

In a way, traditional as well as modern healing techniques are part of our Atlantean heritage, too. Basically they consist of treatments with heat and cold or by electrical and chemical means and are applied for example in form of hot water bottles, ice bags, electrical stimulation of organs, herbal concoctions or medical drugs. This restimulates the GE and reminds it of old Atlantean experiments, of bodies transported in ice blocks or alcohol, of paralyzing the body by electrical means, of keeping it in a drugged state to allow the thetan to be exterior. These treatments work because the GE springs to attention and builds up strong survival impulses against these heavy engrams. Temporarily, it rises in emotional tone. If the treatment is kept light, the GE will pull the body through, if it is overdone, the GE will be overwhelmed by the restimulation, become apathetic and let the body collapse.

In the following chapters we will turn to the more recent history of Earth since Inc.2, see how this planet has become a "Golden West" to extraterrestrial prospectors and see what defenses have been brought up against this.

CHAPTER 5

The Fate of Earth

5.1 Earth since the Cataclysm

A BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE WHOLE TRACK *
EDUCATION BY IMPLANT * A LOBSTER-POT FOR THETANS *
THE DEMON PLANET * MISSIONAIRES OF MANY SHADES *
THE MARCABIAN CONFEDERACY * RE-CIVILIZATION PROJECTS *
HIGH TECH FOR MR. CAVEMAN *
A NET TO CATCH THEM ALL * THETANS ON A LEASH *
THE MARCABIAN IMPACT * “R6 DECO”

After having traveled through such vast time spans (25 quadrillions of years) and learning so many bizarre and novel details, we should perhaps review and summarize the major events on this “whole track” (as Hubbard calls it) before going on and taking a look at the more recent fate of Earth, at the events during the 75 million years that have passed since Inc.2.

With that in mind we will briefly look over the “historical” cultures and civilizations of the last eight to ten thousand years, and then concentrate on the question of to what extent Earth at present is under the sway of extraterrestrial powers.

A BRIEF SUMMARY OF THE WHOLE TRACK

Before there was a common notion of time, before there were space, energy or matter, at a stage of pure beingness, the idea of playing a game on the basis of theta energy quanta was born by Xenu. To start with, there were no particular disagreements with this concept and so the mest game began to be played. Only when Xenu was seen to play dirty did an opposition built up; it was headed by Elron. This happened in the time span of 25 to 17 quadrillion years ago.

The mest game consists of producing theta quanta in order to communicate and create; to do so, one needs a viewpoint. It goes like this: there is a static who by postulate decides to be a player (8th dynamic), takes a viewpoint and extends from it dimension points, anchor points and attention units (all theta quanta) and so creates space, energy and matter on the 7th dynamic.

The liability of this mest game is that in the course of time (time does exist now) the static - who is beyond all dynamics - will increasingly tend to identify with his concept of beingness (8th dynamic) and, worse, with the fluffs of energy he produces

from his viewpoint (7th dynamic) and begin to consider these assets as “himself”. He is now what we (in this book) call a “thetan” a static who partially or wholly forgot about his staticness and exists mainly as mental mest (7th dynamic).

At this stage he can easily be pinpointed and identified. Xenu used this to his advantage, recruited thetans for his game and attached “Xenu glitter”, his very own theta quanta, to his recruits. They in turn embraced this glitter as their one and only treasure, because it made them “be like him”. The glitter, once mixed with their admiration quanta, made the most fantastic glue of all times and formed an everlasting bond between them and their master.

About 17 quadrillions years ago, Xenu and his followers collected abandoned theta creations (“hoovering”), mashed them up by running them through a spin, kept them as self-contained energy spheres, eventually portioned them off and attached them to unaware thetans. After several experimental stages this method was made foolproof and could be used for the benefit of the public at large. A great show was staged and pre-fabricated lumps of theta quanta were attached to the audience. This is Incident 1, 4 quadrillion years ago.

Not many noticed what had happened, and if they did, they were mostly incapable of freeing themselves from the “louse in their pelt”. Soon their ability to uncreate their own creations weakened. Things became more solid.

The Council of Twelve was appointed to resolve this situation and decided upon an aesthetic solution - a physical universe with stars and planets (phi, 6th dynamic) populated by life forms (lambda, 5th dynamic). In context with the “Conversion Program” thetans were to live in and control these life forms, in particular the human form, and slowly restore the intermingled theta quanta of trillions of owners to their creators - basically an auditing process. Elron thought that this was much too roundabout an approach as to be successful. Things were made worse as the Twelve, didn’t exert any administrative control. Additionally there were struggles and intrigues amongst the Twelve, caused by Yatus. Back at the beginning of the mest game, Yatus had added his own games postulate to that of Xenu (“let’s see how far we can go with it”) and ever since played an underhand game within that of Xenu who considered him a rival. Because of the effects of Inc. 1., Yatus could go very far indeed.

He came to be the trusted all-round-man of the Twelve, a position he could gain by his immense ability to persuade and con people. His foul play consisted of instilling his own postulates into the newly created life units (the Genetic Entities).

About 1.5 quadrillion years ago, the Middle Implant (“CC” for scientologists) was staged. It consisted of implanting native abilities to thetan and GE jointly, of establishing a create-destroy polarity as the only solution to any problem of existence, and of impressing basic geometrical patterns and objects (black and white ones) on the mind of the implantee.

During the following trillions of years there was a general coming-to-terms with this new condition, and, thetans being thetans, they made the best of it and at about 750

trillion years ago a definite culture had emerged, characterized by images commonly associated with Atlantis.

Based on polarity from the start (GPMs), the contradictions within the Atlantean culture and particularly the opposition between white wizards and black magicians were such that Atlantis went downhill on a long sloping trend until, in the final stages, lightness had been replaced by massiness, love by pornography, wizardry by high tech and esoteric teaching by implants.

With that, we are down to roughly 200 million years ago. Atlantis slowly sank into oblivion and what emerged on Earth was a “normal civilization” of usually white-skinned men, women and children, with cars, planes, trains, spaceships, anti-gravity devices, Tesla gadgets, etc., the sort of stuff described in the science-fiction by Asimov, Heinlein, A.E. Van Vogt and many others. The cities were huge - after all, they had to house some 180 billion people - but not drab and gray. They were colorful, sparkling and clean and looked somewhat like gigantic honeycombs - quite different from today’s architectural pattern of large horizontal boxes for housing, skyscrapers for banking and smoky industrial sites in the periphery. A special Earth feature was the combination of high tech with biological beauty, zoological rarities and geographical marvels, a combination so unique that Earth was *the* tourist planet of the galaxy, the place to see dinosaurs, be seen by them and perhaps even get eaten by them if you weren’t careful.

This is the setting for Incident 2.

EDUCATION BY IMPLANT

Why was Earth to be the site for Inc.2? One can only guess about it at this stage as evidence doesn’t exactly abound. For one thing it seems that Xenu tried to keep Yatus’ activities within certain limits. This shows in many details - to give just one: a Yatuscan space station (a flying psychological laboratory), commissioned by the government of Teegeeeack (Earth) to do some research on the improvement of female sexual performance by means of drugs, was once, long before Inc.2, shot down by a Xenu fighter unit. Pure jealousy?

Earth was Yatus’ favorite bio lab from the beginning (is this perhaps why Earth abounded with peculiar plants and animals?), it had been the center of the Atlantis civilization and the platform for Yatus’ expansion. So Inc.2 could be interpreted as Xenu’s attempt to deal a deathly blow to his competitor. Xenu, representing blackness, military-mindedness, stubbornness and control of thetans and minds, matched against the shady, quicksilver, ever-smiling and devious Yatus, the creator and distorter of organic life.

A brief review of the actual incident: it went capture - killing hoovering up thetans as well as GEs - attaching them to super cold iceblocks - transport to Earth - placing near major volcanoes - H-bomb into volcano - terrific winds whirling the former thetans about (now mere Body Thetans or BTs) and taking them above the peaks - an “electronic ribbon” keeping them from drifting away. Then they got pulled down and ended up in some sort of tunnel where they received a long implant. Concepts were

flashed at them at an incredibly high rate, causing overwhelm and so identification with the implanted materials.

Small wonder that some fundamental customs and behavior patterns of planet Earth can only be understood in relation to these implants. They consisted of two parts, if you remember: first, the “7’s and CC & OT II materials”; second, the 36 days. We glossed over that at the first mentioning of Inc.2, because clarifying the term “CC” took one whole chapter. (We called it “Middle Implant”.) Now that we properly understand the significance of “CC”, we may look at the line quoted above in detail. It means that the “7’s”, the first section of the CC materials, were followed by the rest of the CC and then by a set of implant commands called “OT II”.

It means that the Inc.2 implants were started off with a repetition of the CC. It means that the contents of the Middle Implant (CC), originally implanted at about 1.5 quadrillion years ago, were given *again* 75 million years ago.

It was done twice. They had kept the reels and tapes in their basement for a long, long time.

The first time, the CC was done individually on curious thetans and GEs; the second time on a thetan/GE compound, a disoriented, confused, panic-stricken mass of degraded Body Thetans (BTs) and Clusters. And without a stop it was followed up by the “OT II materials”.

“OT” means “Operating Thetan”, a term referring to the activity of the solo-auditor in session. He operates as a thetan, not as a body. “OT II” refers to one solo-auditing level in a sequence of three; they are called “OT levels I to III”. They are done after attaining the ability called “Clear”. (In 1965 one used to audit the complete Middle Implant on the “Clearing Course”, the CC, to “go Clear”, but this isn’t always done today as the Middle Implant turned out not be the real reason for people not being Clear. The real reason, as Hubbard says on Tape 10, is Inc.1, yet this wasn’t known in 1965.)

OT II consists of implant commands comprising 120 typewritten pages and, like the CC, is based on GPMs (Goals Problems Masses, meaning that opposing concepts are implanted). OT II is composed of bits of old implants done variously since the Middle Implant - a rather crazy mixture. It covers a lot of ground with regard to aberrating life but isn’t by a long way as existentially fundamental as the Middle Implant. Nevertheless, some parts of it shed such a light on certain agreements typical for Earth that they deserve quoting. (Note that they aren’t quoted in the sequence they appear during the actual implant but are grouped according to subject. Some of them are very long, others only brief impressions. This will be indicated.)

“The figure of a bearded man with a long robe and staff appears in the sky, surveying the universe.”

“Appearance of a huge Being in the sky. 1a. You must survive! 1b. You mustn’t survive! 2a. You should survive! 2b. You shouldn’t survive!” (And so on. It goes on for pages.)

One implant impresses the actual rainbow colors in combination with a create-destroy polarity: *“Creating red destruction. Destroying red destruction. Creating redness. Destroying redness.* And so on, in the sequence red, blue, green, yellow, violet. These are the colors associated with the chakras. Violet in particular is a “sacred color” in some religions.

“Overt GPM: This is a very early implant and contains a mirror which the being is being held in front of It is made to appear as though the being is speaking to himself. The implant operator plays a recording behind the mirror. Then at the end, the mirror is taken away and the hooded implant operator speaks the last part to the being: ‘God will punish you for your sins. Hell is forever: You will receive back what you give out. You have done wrong, you will suffer from it.’ Then ten electric shocks. The mirror is then waived and the operator speaks: ‘See what you have done to yourself: For every evil act you commit, you will get it back ten times or burn forever in Hell. ‘“

One might think the concept of karma were implanted here, mightn’t one? There are more implants of this kind. In the following one, a mirror arrangement gives one the impression that one is doing something destructive to another: *“Here is a lesson. It is if you do something to another that is harmful or damages him in any way you get it back a hundred fold without fail. This is your action. You are doing this to a helpless spirit who was good and kind in order to ruin him forever and degrade yourself.”* *“ Now watch this and see what you are doing to him.”* Now an electronic explosion occurs, followed by a series of implant commands like: *“To catch. Never to be caught. Keep it! Keep it! Keep it! To be caught. Never to catch. Copy it! Duplicate it! Picture it! To imprison. Never to be imprisoned. Keep it! Keep it! Keep it! To be imprisoned Never to imprison. Copy it! Duplicate it! Picture it!”* And so on for 34 commands. Then the mirror arrangement is changed so that one gets the impression that the former victim is doing something to oneself now. *“The consequences of your having done that are terrible, because you did that. It is now two and a half years later These are the consequences. Watch this and see what happens to you. Because of what you did to the poor fellow he’s now giving it back. Watch out.”* The same explosions and implant commands as above follow, except that one is receiving it this time. *“You see what happens because of what you do. When you do something bad to another you get it back later: You are the cause of all your suffering. Overt actions do not pay. Wake up dead, forever.”*

Some other implants address mental operations or one’s relation to bodies. For example: *“You must construct a picture machine. You must not construct a picture machine. You must eradicate a picture machine. You must not eradicate a picture machine”* And so on, seventy commands long. Small wonder taking pictures is a large industry on Earth!

A similar one: *“To build a postulatingness machine. Not to postulate yourself. To build a thinkingness machine. Not to think yourself.”* This one goes on for 96

commands. Afterwards there is virtually nothing that wouldn't be delegated to the circuits of the reactive bank. No thetan left, all bank.

Here is one regarding bodies: *"To love a body. To not love a body. To hate a body. To not hate a body."* And so on, for 76 commands, covering pretty much everything good or bad one could do in relation to a body.

Next in the Inc.2 implant sequence: the 36 days. As we saw in the chapter 3, the 36 days contained enough violence, pornography, drug abuse and religious symbolism as to well satisfy the needs of this planet for the past 75 million years and for future millions as well.

The imagery used was by no means novel. It gave a true picture of what life was like in some parts of the galaxy, particularly in those under the command of Xenu. All one had to do to get a good implant together, was to take a few videos of daily life on Andromeda and reel them off to the implantees of Inc.2.

To summarize: the inhabitants of 76 planets - thetans and GEs were forcibly abducted to Teegeeeack, and once they had arrived a Xenu-inspired imagery was stamped on them and their GEs. There was no chance escaping the ordeal - neither before, during or after it - because of the electronic ribbon.

Hubbard never mentioned the role of the GE in context with Inc. 2 but nevertheless that thetans *and* GEs were hoovered up, is of utmost importance. Because it means that all sorts of GEs, from 76 different planets, were transported and kept here since! This was to have considerable consequences for the later recivilization of Earth.

As soon as life came back to this planet, there were GEs at work, and what would they dramatize if not their time track from the moment they were created originally - and therewith Yatrus's postulates and intentions? And the thetans here - what would *they* dramatize if not all the implants they had received since the beginning of Xenu's game?

Out of this, a big agreement on how to live life emerged. The fantasies of both Xenu and Yatrus have been widely dramatized since. Both have won. Hubbard calls this "bank agreement" agreeing on principles hidden in the reactive mind. It is this that keeps Earth from improving. As well it creates monotony, sameness, uniformity.

Take fashion - all around the world one wears suit and tie in political and business life and a standard type uniform in the military. Traditional variations disappear. Take superstition - the worst form of it to be found in the Educated West where people have been conned to believe in a Big Bang as cause of the universe, in bacteria as the reason for diseases, in psychiatric drugs as a cure for the mind, and in life insurance's as a way to take care of life after death.

Use a credit card for easy shopping and permit your bank to register where you spend your money. All your personal data are on computer, so you'd better be a good

citizen. Drive carefully but don't worry about accidents as your friendly policeman can do a full check-up on you via his portable computer anytime. And next time you see your physician for a routine check-up, trust him not to inject a crystal-based monitor into your bloodstream which makes you detectable by satellite anywhere on the planet. Watch your TV, listen to your headphones 20 hours a day and none dare call this electronic population surveillance. The wonder world of your friendly implanter society. We are here to entertain and protect you. From Xenu with love.

A LOBSTER-POT FOR THETANS

The "ribbon", a "standing wave" according to Tape 10, wasn't limited only to the area above each single volcano. It actually went around the whole planet. One might compare it to a screen or perhaps a net, 26.5 km up. The whirled-up thetans stuck to it. Nobody was to get out, neither then nor later.

Imagine Earth to be a green watermelon inside a large children's balloon. Between the surface of the watermelon and the skin of the balloon there is some empty space. This skin is taut but quite flexible. It can be pulled down to the surface of the watermelon. At ground level a pulled-down bit of balloon skin would run into a point; further up it would widen into a funnel. Looked at from the outside, the balloon would show a dimple.

Now imagine planet Earth being enveloped by this electronic screen. The screen is "pulled down" around each volcano. After the thetans were blown up into the atmosphere, they hit the screen at a height of 26.5 km and rolled down along the outside of these vortexes like condensed steam off a window pane.

Around each volcano such funnels were formed. After the operation was over they were allowed to snap back, the "balloon" lost its dimples and took on its evenly roundish form again. This standing wave has been up there ever since. It doesn't let thetans out. It lets them in, though. It's a one-way screen, a lobster-pot for thetans.

THE DEMON PLANET

This is Earth after the cataclysm: the battle following Inc.2 is over, the Loyal Officers have won, Xenu sits in jail, Earth is a heap of smoldering radioactive ashes with its sun darkened by heavy layers of cloud. It's dark and cold. Nuclear winter. Little or no biological life (except perhaps in the deep seas.)

There is spiritual life, though, if only in the poorest of states. The space between the surface of the planet and the Screen at 26.5 km is crammed with BTs and Clusters imported from other planets. Former inhabitants of Earth proper, such as thetans and human, animal and plant GEs whose bodies had died naturally in the catastrophe, drift about. An most unhealthy place since those BTs and Clusters will cling to any body walking about on Earth, particularly to human ones.

There are more homeless thetans, BTs and Clusters hovering about than the current number of two-legged bodies on this planet could accommodate. They are all waiting. This explains where all the “new souls” come from as world population increases.

The reason that animals seem so “pure” and “innocent” to us is that they are not controlled by Body Thetans. BTs, having formerly been thetans, will try to control human bodies or thetans living in human bodies. Animals are usually operated by GEs only. As they are able to learn within the limits of their basic programs and as each of them leads a life of its own, they do turn into individuals during their life. But they are GEs, not thetans. You do find the occasional animal, though, that seems strangely human, perhaps even evil or demonic - well, that one probably has a stray BT sitting on him.

You could compare the situation of Earth to a big stew of lost spirits steaming along in their juice like inside a pressure cooker, held down and kept from escaping by the Screen. All thetans and GEs who were here before Inc.2 and most that came afterwards, are part of that stew.

Apart from affecting Teegeeack and the other 76 planets involved, Inc.2 had a much larger effect than only paralyzing a few hundred billion thetans. Why worry, one might say - after all it involved no more than a mere handful of planets within the vastness of the physical universe and its many galaxies. But perhaps one ought to look at this from the viewpoint of the 8th dynamic, of the dynamic of thought, of postulates. Most thetans, as we know, are their postulates by identification with them, and as they “overlap as infinities”, each thought formed anywhere immediately communicates straight across to all other thetans. Nothing can be kept a secret on the 8th dynamic. Now imagine for some hundreds of billions of thetans to be paralyzed, to be fully introverted into their lost and stolen identity with no other game going on for them, to be totally spun into mesc with all their attention glued to that BT-part of them, down on Teegeeack - wouldn't that create ripples on the 8th dynamic? Wouldn't that create a huge negative bias, a vector of “we can't cope”, “it's all over”, “no hope” and such like? And wouldn't that immediately affect all thetans, even those not involved with any of Xenu's incidents?

Incident 2 “dirtied up” the 8th dynamic. That's the major damage it did.

The planet stayed spiritually contaminated because the information contained in the Inc.2 implants never got lost. The Screen contains a mechanism to reinforce the R6-information forever. Anyone touching the Screen after death will re-experience the R6 data because of the BTs and Clusters he unknowingly carries with him. The Screen boosts the information they contain and so strengthens the agreement the thetan has with it. Any piece of bank a thetan picks up or creates during his Earth life gets boosted inside the Screen, confuses the thetan and makes him return to Earth. (The exact mechanism will be described later.)

Whether one gets caught or not depends entirely on one's awareness and spiritual purity. Some people have migrated in and out many times without any hindrance from the Screen. When you audit such a person you usually find that there is very little to do. Some slight difficulties in their present lifetime, perhaps, but good recall of their past lives, an awareness of the Screen and a familiarity with the OT III materials beyond what they could have read anywhere.

So a very aware person may manage to live life on Earth without contacting any "Earth bank" or creating more "own bank" by non-ethical behavior. But as soon as his awareness decreases, BTs will get stuck to him and load him with implant information. He won't manage to leave Earth again, because he doesn't fit through the meshes of the Screen any more. One way in, no way out. A lobster-pot for thetans.

This is the fate most missionaries to Earth suffered, no matter of what galactopolitical persuasion: they came, looked about, did their mission and left - perhaps once, perhaps twice, perhaps a dozen times. Sooner or later they got caught.

MISSIONAIRES OF MANY SHADES

Who does those "missions"? Various parties, one of them the "Galactic Patrol", a para-military police organization formed after Inc.2 by surviving loyal officers. Not much is known about that time, about who started the "GP" (as most Galactic Patrol members call it), how it is organized and what exactly it is meant to do.

Although data on this are sparse, the reality of the Galactic Patrol keeps being confirmed. Occasionally a solo-auditor may find himself in contact with a GP ship or recall the exact nature of his personal mission as a GP missionary to Earth. He may become aware of his GP rank and even of a promotion after some particularly daring or clever solo-auditing action in context with countering Xenu's Game.

As countering Xenu's Game is the first barrier to overcome in order to execute the Conversion Program as it was originally postulated by the Twelve (i.e. undoing the physical universe) one might conveniently state that the Galactic Patrol serves a Valid purpose on a lower administrative level within that program.

Auditors who discover themselves to be GP members usually are quite inconspicuous, "normal" people living a quiet and ordinary life, and they are usually surprised by such recognition's. But no matter how hard they may try to suppress and reject this by means of "scientific skepticism" and a "realistic viewpoint on things", they won't succeed and actually feel worse. However, once they accept their mission, they feel they have finally found their way back to their fundamental "purpose line" as *thetans* (not as mere "Earth dwellers"). Their lives tend to pick up speed and momentum and become more satisfying and exciting games than before.

That it doesn't take Hubbard's weird inspirations to break through to such recognition's is confirmed by the following: "On March 20, 1956, 10 p.m., a thought of

very remote possibility entered my mind, which, I fear, will never leave me again: **Am I a spaceman?** Do I belong to a new race on earth, bred by men from outer space in embraces with earth women? Are my children offspring of the *first interplanetary race?* (...) Many matters of my existence have, with this question, fallen quickly into place, having been uncertainties only four days ago; the temptation to answer the above question in the positive is irresistible. However, I shall postpone final decision until the facts have spoken. In the meantime I shall proceed on the assumption: *It is not beyond actual possibilities that men from outer space have landed (or will in the future land) on earth and have begun to breed here for what ever reason they may have had.*" Wilhelm Reich said this, Sigmund Freud's pupil (emphasis by Reich³⁷). He didn't take into consideration, though, that most missionaries (including himself) didn't land on Earth physically but came down as thetans without bodies.

An afterthought on Reich - in chapter 1.2 we learnt that he claimed that many phenomena of life were caused by a bio-energy he called "orgone" (something others would call prana or ch'i). Yet Reich not only postulated this - he actually worked with this organ. Experimenting in the Arizona desert, he found layers of "deadly orgone or dor" keeping plant growth down. With his "cloud buster" he managed to convert dead orgone into live orgone whereupon the desert turned green within days. His cloud buster (a simple set of metal pipes) served to crack clouds which would otherwise have sailed on, and make them rain off, or even produce clouds right in the blue sky. With this, Reich attracted the attention of extraterrestrial UFOs patrolling the area; he discovered that it was them who actually produced the dor. Reich found that he could shoo them away with his cloud buster, alerted the military to this and was initially assisted by them. His career came to its end, though, after he had built a therapeutic device he called "orgone accumulator". The FDA (Food and Drug Administration) declared that the concept of "orgone" was unscientific and not only prohibited any further use of the orgone accumulator but had all of Reich's writings containing the word "orgone" confiscated and burnt. Reich protested and was put in prison for two years. In 1957, two weeks prior to his release he mysteriously died of a "heart attack".

To go back to the Galactic Patrol - it was engaged in the execution of three consecutive projects: first, re-population of Earth to make it inhabitable physically; second, re-civilization in terms of its technological, philosophical and religious education; third, political education so as to allow the people of Earth by their own choice to become part of one of the existing political communities in this galaxy.

Not that the GP were the only force working on such programs. One auditee told me that he had come down with roughly 20'000 others in the 1950s, to help build up Maharishi's Transcendental Meditation movement. Some groups, though, have altogether opposing aims. The most notable amongst them are the "Marcabians". They want no emancipation and free thought but the opposite: planetary control, a One World dominated by One Thought, One Religion, One Government, One Bank. Needless to say, they are supporters of Xenu. What they "feel like" has been very aptly described in books like "Momo" by Michael Ende and "Haroun" by Salman Rushdie.

THE MARCABIAN CONFEDERACY

Xenu's career since before Inc.2 in a few words: an invader force from Andromeda had begun to infiltrate key positions in this galaxy a long time prior to Inc.2. Xenu was their leader. Separately to the Galactic Confederation he established a military and political bridgehead located near the North Star. (This is where the "Coltus-implant" mentioned in chapter 3.1, was done.) They had a heavily industrialized high-tech civilization and indulged in implanting as a method of education. Police control, thought control, brainwashing, psychiatry, electric shocks, identity cards, electronic surveillance of one's every move, everybody part of the secret service and spying on everybody else. One is reminded of Stalinist Russia or Mao's China. Their fashion very much resembled that of the 1940s and 1950s on this planet.

From his Polaris base Xenu slowly managed to work his way up to becoming president of the Galactic Confederation. And then he "solved overpopulation" (which wasn't a real problem anyway) by mass killings of bodies and mass abduction of thetans and GEs. And then 36 days of R6 materials. ("R6" is Hubbard's scientology name for this particular reactive bank.)

But things didn't quite go according to plan, as we know. Xenu was jailed, escaped, and apparently was accepted as a political refugee in the "Marcab Confederacy", located in the constellation of Pegasus. The Marcab Confederacy isn't much older than 200'000 years and was formed out of the fragments of older political units. Hubbard's description of Marcab is strikingly close to that he gives of Xenu's original bridgehead near Polaris: *"In the last 10,000 years they have gone on with a sort of decadent kicked-in-the-head civilization that contains automobiles, business suits, fedora hats, telephones, spaceships. A civilization which looks almost exact duplicate but is worse off than the current U.S. civilization."*¹ One might think it's the same place - if it weren't for the fact that Marcab is quite in a different part of the galaxy than Polaris. Perhaps the Marcabians evolved out of the Polaris culture, perhaps they were implanted with R6 materials to make them similar to what Polaris was like 75 million years ago and what Earth has come to be like during the last few decades. Be that as it may, Xenu never gave up and found for himself a position of power again, if only at a lower level than ever before.

Only recently, in a session, a well-meaning Marcabian citizen who had managed to escape to Earth (this is his first life here) gave me a debrief. He had wound up on Marcab by mistake (he had been betrayed), didn't stay there long enough to get any implants worth mentioning and so wasn't a died-in-the-wool Marcabian but could freely speak about it. According to him, Marcab could be compared to a huge industrial plant; whole planets of their system are factories, others mining sites, and so on. They use robot bodies equipped with a programmed theta field acting as "GE"; the thetan identifies with that field. It's all done on an implant basis. For private purposes they have flesh bodies, too. They leave their robot bodies and go home to their flesh bodies, or perhaps get awarded a flesh body when they have worked a few hundred years in a robot body. Or when they get promoted to higher administrative ranks. When a robot body breaks, its governing field is sucked up and preserved; the thetan is immediately

channeled into the next robot body. They don't sleep and eat. There is no death. There is only mechanical work, tedious and unchanging for centuries on end.

Their awareness of theta phenomena and the corresponding ability to control thetans is way beyond what's imaginable on Earth. Much as it all seems to work on a mechanical basis, they do understand fundamental theta principles - but instead of using them towards more freedom, they use them for more slavery. For example, in a rather brutal procedure they tear off part of a thetan and lock it up in an electronic vault before they allow him to go on an off-planet mission or to a space station. Through the encapsulated portion of theta quanta they control him and "tweak" him when he gets liberal ideas. (This mechanism was referred to as "body in pawn" by Hubbard⁸. The expression refers to theta bodies as well as flesh bodies being held captive; both types were found in sessions.)

With Marcab as his new base, Xenu was determined to get even with those Loyal Officers who had dared to thwart his purposes. Some of them were on Earth, trying to re-build it. Earth became Xenu's target.

RE-CIVILIZATION PROJECTS

Here is a brief history of the projects outlined above: To start with, the inhabitability of Earth had to be ascertained. Spacemen came down to register the level of radioactivity, caught their BTs and Clusters that way and exported them to their home planets. With their heavy space craft and energetic acceleration they could pass the Screen both ways, sure enough - but "part of them" got stuck here, and "part of here" clung to them.

Witness today's astronauts - seemingly they have no problem moving through the Screen. But quite a number of them became religious fanatics or alcoholics. So one may assume that shreds of their attention were caught by the Screen, some of their BTs were awakened, spilled their contents and aberrated their "hosts".

It could happen to anyone; you don't have to be an astronaut. I remember one auditee telling me that he dozed off during a routine passenger flight at 10,000 m, went exterior and was snatched by the Screen right away. He had been in a troubled state of mind before he fell asleep and when he came to, he found himself not only in a more troubled but as well in a quite confused state of mind!

Getting out *without* a body is the difficult part, as we can see. Small wonder that Earth acquired a bad name. The "cursed planet".

It took some millions of years before radioactivity was down sufficiently for life to emerge from the oceans and crawl ashore. The record of that is contained in the memory banks of the Genetic Entity.

The slow evolution from plankton upwards doesn't account for *all* life forms, though. On Tape 10 Hubbard says that 20 million years ago a body line was started on Earth. Human, animal and plant bodies taken from other planets were imported here, to accommodate the various GEs whose programs needed the right type of species and environment to get started up. They needed to "feel at home" to become active. This way the peculiar animal worlds of Europe, Africa, Asia and Australia could develop. This way the human races could develop. Their particular affinity to certain areas corresponds to their home environment- people (GEs) from desert planets feel at home in the Atacama, Gobi or Sahara deserts, people from tropical planets prefer the jungles, those from icy planets go to Alaska, and so on. The same is true for animals and plants.

Look at yourself - which climate, which natural environment would suit you most? Well, that's where your GE belongs, or at least, that's what she is dramatizing. It's not necessarily an area the thetan would choose - it's the GE's choice! The thetan can play games anywhere; regarding environmental conditions he is independent and flexible. The GE isn't.

Bodies were bred in body farms on other planets, frozen and taken down here. Some of these body farms, particularly those run by Yatruscans, were mere female fertilization factories with more brutality in the process than you wish to imagine. Gang rape in the name of science. A peak point of their dramatization was reached in recent history with Hitler's "Lebensborn" camps, breeding centers for a purely blond and blue-eyed race, and only last year we heard about mass rapes in Yugoslavia to "impress Serbian characteristics upon them".

During the first phase of the re-population project, Earth bodies were run by very aberrated thetans or even BTs. Nobody else was there to run them. Thinking, planning and acting revolved around extreme dramatizations of Inc.2, always at the expense of the GE; they mutilated and killed each other by violence, sex and drugs. Not that this pattern would have changed much since. Most bodies even today are run by aberrated thetans in combination with BTs, some even by Clusters alone, accounting for the astonishing consistency of aberrated behavior on Earth throughout its recorded history. Sex, drugs and violence - they just love it down here. And it pays! Best way to make money.

HIGH TECH FOR MR. CAVEMAN

In order to educate and civilize these maniacal body/GE/BT/thetan composites, the next program was activated. Teachers came. "White gods" in "fiery cars" descended from the heavens, switched the engines of their space ships off and taught people the simple survival skills of plant medicine, yoga, meditation, acupuncture, architecture, etc. The Chinese know that their realm was founded millions of years ago by the "five emperors"; the last one of them, 4000 years ago, wrote the famous I-Ching, a book of wisdom. The Irish, the Japanese, the Australian Aboriginals, the Polynesians, the Celts - there is hardly a race that doesn't recall in their legends that they descended straight from the gods. Read Daniken, Buttlar, Charroux and other authors; the historical

and archeological evidence they have compiled makes it almost silly not to assume that man's civilization was imported from elsewhere^{35, 38, 39}.

Look at the dawn of recorded history, some five to ten thousand years ago, at the civilizing impact of the Vedas, the early Chinese traditions, the Sumerians. Look at 500 years before Christ - there is Buddha, Lao-Tsu, Confucius. In contrast, during the centuries around Christ's birth - religious confusion, self-denial and what not, all across Europe and Asia Minor. Then the 8th and later the 16th century - art and philosophy in full bloom all around, be it in Europe, in India, Persia, China or Japan. Again in contrast the 19th century - Industrial Revolution, smokestacks, assembly lines, man a cogwheel.

Why are certain periods in the history of man bright, others dark? Why is it that a culture does not evolve evenly throughout the centuries? Why its flowering and withering? Why no steady peaceful progress?

Well, says the educated historian, it's the "zeitgeist" at work. ("Zeitgeist", taken from German: the characteristic thought or feeling of a period of time; literally "spirit of the age".)

Fine, Mr. Historian, but who creates that zeitgeist? Answer: missionaries of many shades. They are not all from the same side of the game - some were partisans to Elron and the Galactic Patrol, others to Xenu and his Marcabians, others to Yatus. The re-population and re-civilization projects weren't executed by the GP alone, not by far! There were plenty of groups fighting over the bone.

They have in common that they all contributed to the great impulses in history, each to their own advantage. Somebody started something somewhere - a new religion, an empire, a scientific discovery - and immediately everybody else would jump on the bandwagon, try to steer it his way or at least benefit from it. And depending on who made it on a pope's seat, an emperor's throne, a professor's chair, the world would be steered towards an age of brightness or one of darkness, respectively.

To give some examples, taken from auditing sessions: One missionary, as a member of the Galactic Patrol, had assisted in putting the "Nazca lines" there for the purpose of guiding incoming space vessels to a space port. The Nazca lines are huge images of birds and other animals engraved on the Peruvian Nazca plain.

They measure the size of several football fields each and (a puzzle to scientists) can't have been constructed from ground level. The GP staff got the cooperation of the local priesthood, used the religious concepts of the area and made people participate in a "sacred ritual" under the PR cover of "the gods want you to draw those lines". And they did.

Less lucky was a missionary 17,000 years ago who was to establish a civilization in South America yet failed, because the natives proved hostile when he started to demonstrate how one can outdo the local magician by building electrical batteries and other fancy devices way beyond the stage of that culture. The missionary got killed, left the body, went up to his stationary space ship, was reprimanded because

of acting against specific orders and demoted. (They usually have spare bodies up there, for those who come back after leaving their Earth body.)

Several such attempts were made and seem to have failed, because it was as late as about 10,000 years ago that decent civilizations were begun to be built here, to start with in India and China, later in Central and South America.

A NET TO CATCH THEM ALL

Foreign specialists usually came down as thetans (like the unlucky GP man above) and took a body here, usually a baby body (but not always, depending on the urgency of their mission). They keep coming to this day. I audited some who arrived (i.e. were born) between 1938 and 1956; they had no past lives on Earth but a clear knowledge of the mission they had to fulfill here - and there is no reason why more of them should not have come since.

This is perhaps one of the largest area of omitted data in the whole field of UFO research where it is believed that the "technical advisors to mankind" came here physically. Well, some did for sure - but most came the non-hardware route, by "thetan migration". They dropped their bodies wherever they were, be it on a Space station 25,000 km up or on their home planet, traveled down here as thetans exterior and took a baby body. Or, for those who were on an urgent mission, they took the body of an adult when they found him exterior - when he slept, was drunk or ill, or right after an accident. Lacking that they might have simply knocked him out of his body.

The key missionaries to this planet - and you may call up any name in the "Who is Who" of medicine, engineering, art, philosophy, religion, cartography, chemistry, physics, geology, astronomy, etc. - they all came down as thetans exterior. Perhaps they had to live here for a few lifetimes before they got started on their missions or before they managed to complete them, but at any rate, that's how they came and went.

But little do these migrating thetans know what awaits them: the Screen. It installs forgetfulness and evokes the exact patterns of the implants quoted further up, of karma, god in the heavens, must be good, mustn't be bad, lovely violet colors, oh god is nigh, but oh no you aren't ready yet, been a bad boy, here's your register of sins, must take a body, go down and make amends; yes sir, I will, poor sinner that I am - and he gets linked up with a GE and down the tube and pictures of father and mother having intercourse and - wham! - back in the womb.

St. Peter, knocking at heaven's door, the Book of Reckoning these images were seen by many in their sessions when they recalled after-death experiences. But the sins read out to one aren't one's own, it's a false register, it's all the entities one has ever picked up speaking in chorus - and so it would take forever to get redeemed. One can't make amends for what one hasn't done. And one gets confused about one's real past lives as well.

The Tibetan Book of the Dead has all the stages of it worked out, it even says that it is all make-believe and one shouldn't get caught up with it 40. It emphasizes that the apparitions one sees are entirely dependent upon one's karma and one's religious education. This statement would account for the continuing differences between the many god and demon cults all around the world - one dies, sees what one has in one's mind anyway, goes back to one's familiar tradition and continues it (a conclusion modern after-death researchers have come to as well 41,42). But underlying all cultural variations there is a sameness - that of Xenu's implants. The "white light", the most common and moving after-death experience - doesn't that remind one of the "waves of light" of Inc.1 and the lights seen during the Middle Implant? One's own implants and boosted-up entities are played back on oneself and seemingly (but falsely) stabilize one's confusion; that's what this is.

Much as the Tibetan Book of the Dead claims that the between lives procedure should take 49 days, this has not been confirmed by auditing results. Some thetans don't lose their heads as much as others over the images they envision, resist the enthrallment and deliberately choose a new body in a family of their choice. For some the journey takes longer than a mere 49 days; they may be gone for years or even decades. Others who left their body in a state of panic and shock may be back in a new one within hours, since a body provides the stable orientation point they need the most in such a condition.

Those who come here for the first time usually have no clue what's going to come their way. No briefings, no instructions were given to them when they left. They may arrive with the idea that they will be welcomed and that they won't even need a body to communicate with Earth people. They expect to be noticed without a body, just as they are used to wherever they come from (at least a missionary from Arcturus said this to me). The spiritual degradedness, density and solidity of this planet is unimaginable to them. So they come down like shooting stars through the vastness of space, take a break to gaze at the brightness of Earth, hover about like a feather in a summer breeze, touch the Screen - and are drawn into something so subtle, interesting and pleasant that only a few become suspicious.

First they are serviced by what appears to be some sort of Planet Earth Tourist Information Center. It starts out with lovely colors and goes on with heavenly gardens populated by exceedingly beautiful men, women and children dancing on green meadows, their bodies light and subtle as sun rays; then long, drawn-out nature movies of beautiful Earth landscapes are shown. To the extent that the thetan feels attracted to these scenes he may actually, in his later, real life, wind up meeting the people and live in the places he saw. It's absolutely hypnotic. The moment one doesn't pay attention one falls for it. The joke is that they see what they expect to see, or that visions of their own past, of the places they just left, are played back to them. Everybody sees something different. The Screen only boosts what's there; it doesn't actually give new information. It reads the incoming thetan's vibrations and turns them into a holographic picture show of such lifelikeness that the newcomer doesn't notice that it's only a show but actually thinks he is on Earth *already!*

Last in the show are pictures of copulating couples, often one's own parents, and - swoosh! - one wakes up inside the womb. At this point the thetan has already, without noticing, been coupled together with a GE and sees what the GE sees.

More unlucky visitors might be caught by an enemy patrol ship before contacting the Screen. They might get pulled in and receive a little "bias implant" - not enough to make them go off their mission but sufficient to give it some sort of bias so that they pursue it without any success. Supposing they had the task - like for example Nicola Tesla or Wilhelm Reich - to assist Earth people in developing non-fossil and non-nuclear energy devices, they would certainly do so but somehow wind up in the hands of the wrong people with the result of their planet-saving inventions locked away in bank vaults (Tesla) or them being killed and their work ridiculed (Reich).

And after that bias-implant: the Screen, same procedure as usual. To summarize: on one's way in, one may not become aware of the Screen as it simply plays one's own purposes and expectations back to one. Therefore one feels one has come to the right place. On one's way out, the Screen reinforces the 36-day implant (R6) and by association other parts of Inc.2 as well. A thetan goes up there with a string of BTs hanging around his neck (one doesn't lose them after death), gets a light shock on contacting the Screen, his BTs come to life and so do their Inc.2 images. During the sex-pictures the thetan gets teamed up with a GE, and down he goes again. The oftener he does this the "fatter" he gets (in terms of BTs attached to him) and the smaller is his chance of ever getting out again. That the Screen only boosts what the thetan brings along anyway, might be an explanation for the fact that many people get re-born in the same area generation after generation. They are shown what they are used to and return to it.

In the 1920s, the psychoanalyst C. G. Jung, a pupil of Freud, discovered that primeval symbols can be found in the minds of all men on Earth and postulated that there was a "collective unconscious". He considered these "archetypes" to be benevolent as they dealt with such elevated images as gods and angels - yet little did he know that he had found but the implant pictures held in place and perpetuated by the Screen. That Jung failed to interpret the phenomenon correctly does of course not diminish his merits in having discovered it for the west. (Jung was actually quite familiar with the Tibetan Book of the Dead.)

Although the Tibetans don't actually refer to the Screen as such, it was described variously by others. Once, for example, I saw a Brazilian shaman, an Indio; he said he could leave his body and go towards the stars, but not further than the "spider web". That was his limit. What a wonderfully descriptive name! The Screen appears as well under the apt name of "Erdguertelzone" (Earth belt zone) in Franz Bardon's autobiography "Frabato" and is described to contain various gods, demons and other apparitions. And it seems that Hiranjaloki, the world of spiritual frolicking so rapturously described by Yogananda, may be nothing else but the Screens play-back of the Atlantis-inspired heavenly gardens found on the time track of thetan and GE alike. Similarly Xenu's demons trumpeting angels and devils mentioned in the Old Testament and as well in the Koran; similarly, and specific to the Islamic world, the Yatruscan

ideal scene of 72 virgins (huris) attending to the needs of any male who makes it to heaven, and in their arms there shall be forever bliss without fatigue (so says the Koran)

The sobering bottom line to all this is that the thetan, as soon as he exteriorizes from his body, goes into a state of ecstasy (literally “a state outside”) or attempts to extend his space to the utter limits of the cosmos, gets caught by the Screen and sees what Xenu and Yatruss taught him to see during the past trillenia. And he, satisfied to have found religious truth, falls back elated.

THETANS ON A LEASH

Yet another installation impedes the efforts of well-meaning thetans trying to do something positive about Earth. Xenu made a long-range plan to take care of that, a masterpiece of precaution. Hubbard’s materials state that at the very end of Inc.2, after the 36 days, BTs and Clusters are taken to Hawaii and Las Palmas for “packaging”; on Tape 10 he adds that they were shot into space or sunk into the sea. Auditing sessions have revealed how the story went on. This is how: BTs and Clusters were packed up and stored away *for later use*, some on this planet (under the sea), some off-planet (on Mars, for example), some even back on the 76 planets the thetans had been abducted from.

They were kept in iceblocks or electronic spheres. When needed, a portion of these tightly packed ridges was broken off, “unfrozen” and selectively attached to thetans so as to monitor their every move and to whisper distracting thoughts in their ears. We’ll refer to them as “monitor-BTs” from now on, or simply as “Monitors”. They were “trained on their man” by means of shocks and concept flashes.

No taking chances. A missionary would be approaching Earth and - zap! - a Monitor was shot at him. The ever-watchful Marcabian ships took care of that since the recivilization projects had shown results and Earth had become “interesting” again.

Not only non-Marcabian missionaries suffered this fate. Marcabians, not trusting anybody, put Monitors on their own people, too! Since all Marcabian troops and operators were implant educated, they weren’t much good at creative and constructive thinking and so had to be watched over by Two-Way-Monitors for observation and control.

Any Marcabian agent or non-Marcabian missionary operating on Earth - be they high-ranking church officials, businessmen, politicians, scientists, artists - any of them has his set of Monitors on him. And up in stationary space stations, on Mars or even in the Pyrenees operators sit at their screens day and night and record each and every move of their targets. (How this was discovered out about will be revealed in chapter 6.)

Monitors may sit on a series of different “hosts” in sequence. One auditor followed a monitor from the moment it was “reawakened” in some undersea station on Earth, trained on his man by electronic shock and postulates, put on the man, and then

by remote control was made to change hosts and thereby impart the information package he was implanted with, to various targets.

Being theta creations, Monitors are not dull lumps of mass but able to make flexible, intelligent decisions within the narrow range of the program implanted into them. They master the basic theta abilities of reaching and withdrawing and of evaluating importance's with regard to a prescribed course. At a given cue, they will jump into action and influence their host as they were trained to do.

Doing this grants them existence, doing it well ensures their survival into the future. For fear of further implanting they are usually unwilling to talk and give their makers away. Better some game than no game, better some sort of existence than no existence. Therefore, from their own viewpoint, they are trying to "help" within the context of the game they were forced into; usually they are even convinced that they are supporting their boss in *his* game! They identify with him and their host with them - unknowingly, of course. This is what makes it so hard to detect them.

In general one doesn't find single Monitors but a number of them, often a dozen or more. They are connected in form of horizontal and vertical communication lines forming an organizational pattern of administrative ranks and command/feedback channels up and down the ranks. Such "Monitor organizations" are used to control important personalities or coordinate the actions of agents operating in different parts of the planet.

This is Xenu's control network- an organization of BTs and Clusters. It makes "playing grand politics" on this planet as easy and predictable as staging a puppet show.

THE MARCABIAN IMPACT

Take Joseph Stalin - there's a good Marcabian for you. Very male, very black leather, very police state, very control-minded. No religion, no free thought. Stalin, Franco, Mussolini, Hitler and their henchmen - Marcabian missionaries. A field day for them, a field epoch!

It had started earlier, of course. 19th century, Industrial Revolution! Assembly lines, mine shafts, factories, black soot, smoke, ill health, men, women and children treated like robots, paid by the hour, thrown away when exhausted and exploited.

Towards the end of the 19th century the impressionists were the last ones to paint sunlight and flowers and portray the gentle, cheerful sides of life before darkness set in in the form of two World Wars. Art nouveau was the final death throes, and then there was extinction. Music went a similar way - its stability and balance in the 18th century, the "well-temperedness" of Bach, Mozart and Beethoven, gave way to an age of increasing ambiguity, and as the 20th century began, music fell apart into tonality and atonality⁴³. It isn't for no reason that the atonal composer Schoenberg should say in

reference to his 2nd string quartet of 1908 “Ich spüre Luft von anderen Planeten” (“I feel the air of other planets”). Which planets, one wonders?

Only a year later, in 1909, the writer Marinetti in his “futuristic manifesto” spoke out against any tradition, convention and beauty and actually called for the destruction of it. Then the First World War. Then, in 1924, the birth of surrealism, defined by Andre Breton as “a psychic automatism’ whereby the subconscious - discovered already by Freud - was to be expressed without critical censoring, without thought and without any intention towards morals and aesthetics. Dreams and associations were given a “higher reality” (surrealism) than anything felt by one’s senses⁴⁴.

The world was in turmoil. Freud discovered deep-seated sexual urges in the subconscious, C.G. Jung his “archetypes” - it was obvious that man was neither master of his own mind nor of his world, because witnessing the destruction and bestialities occurring between 1914 and 1945 one could only conclude that powers way beyond one’s control were at work. What really fell in those years - under the bombs from allied war planes on German cities, under the A-bomb mushroom above Hiroshima and later, under the ax blows of Chinese “cultural revolutionaries” wasn’t just a considerable amount of old masonry, no, what fell were stable orientation points, familiar skylines, honored traditions and a whole life style. And what rose to hitherto unprecedented heights, to uncontrollable power, was one very Marcabian manifestation - world banking.

World banking consists of the well-known Xenu method of hoovering up vital particles (money), storing them in places where one can’t easily retrieve them and turning the sum of them over to a huge dictatorial apparatus that depletes people of their energies, prescribes their every step and ultimately paralyzes them; it consists of attaching small prefabricated particles such as ID-cards and taxation numbers to bodies and making thetans identify with them to a point that they don’t even notice how much they are under surveillance.

“R6 DECO”

The Marcabian impact, after bringing the world into a state of turmoil, found its cultural expression after the Second World War in what I would suggest calling “R6 deco” - decorative art in true R6 style. It’s a play on words derived from “art deco”, a decorative style following art nouveau in the 1920s, and “R6 bank”, the technical name for the Inc.2 bank.

R6 deco - that’s black police uniforms, black sun glasses with no smiles below them, rivet-studded black leather, strobe lights in discos, heavy metal, punk music, James Bond life style accessories, Barbie dolls, types like Marilyn Monroe and Humphrey Bogart, Las Vegas, the decoration on one-armed bandits and pinball machines, Tibetan religious kitsch, Hindu religious kitsch, Italian religious kitsch, the pope and his pomp; it’s Madonna (pop star) suggestively dramatizing the time-honored

combination of whore and cross - witness the witch processes of the middle ages where healer-women were made whores by their inquisitor priests and burnt at the stake; witness the burning crosses of the Ku-Klux Klan and the R6-madness of the American government burning David Koresh's "family", including 15 women and 17 children, in Waco, Texas, 1993⁷⁹. Our world today.

R6 deco is not a new thing at all, the same types, the same images keep re-appearing throughout the ages. Perhaps it is more pronounced now than ever before - but what about trumpeting angels and chariots on renaissance and baroque paintings? What about Michelangelo's Sistine Chapel and Beethoven's 9th symphony? Hieronimus Bosch? Salvador Dali? What about St.Peter and Santa Claus? R6 deco all the way. The Screen forever.

When did it start? With Xenu's "Control All! compulsion, followed up by the body-oriented fantasies of Yatus and his delights in sex, drugs and torture. Xenu contributed mind control and crime. Yatus sex, drugs and violence. Trillions of years of separate experimentation went by, and then all of that was packed together in one complex data bank brought about by a 36 day super-implant the likes of which were unknown before, preserved as mental energy and mass and re-inforced each time a thetan extends his space up to the region of the Screen at a 26.5 km altitude.

Sex, drugs, violence - the R6-bank. A huge agreement. Turns Earth into what it is.

5.2 Masterminding History

WHOSE “ONE WORLD”? * XENU’S MONOLOGUE * ONE WORLD,
ONE VOTE * A WHITE PLANET

In the last chapter it was implied that history didn’t simply evolve out of itself and that the “zeitgeist” resulted from the intentions of extraterrestrial powers striving to conquer and subjugate Earth. One dominating intention was said to be expressed as Xenu’s One World plan, executed by Marcabian agents against the resistance of a Galactic Patrol who are determined to make Earth a member of the Galactic Confederation by increasing galacto-political awareness in its population. (Of which this book is one example.) In this chapter, we are going to investigate if this “One World” concept holds true if tested out against longer historical periods. (So far, only the last two centuries since the Industrial Revolution were considered.)

WHOSE “ONE WORLD”?

About 4000 years ago, a man called Abraham was spoken to by the One God who said: “I am God Almighty; (. . .). And I will make my covenant between me and you, and will multiply you exceedingly. (. . .) Behold, my covenant is with you, and you shall be the father of a multitude of nations. (. . .) And I will give to you, and to your descendants after you, the land of your sojournings, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.” (Gen 17.1-8) Only two generations later, Abraham’s grandson Jacob saw a ladder going up to heaven and the One God spoke down to him and said: “The land on which you lie I will give to you and to your descendants; and your descendants shall be like the dust of the earth, and you shall spread abroad to the west and to the east and to the north and to the south; and by you and your descendants shall all the families of the earth bless themselves.” (Gen 28.13-14) Next in line to receive the message, at a time when Israel was troubled by Egypt, was Moses. He saw the One God in a burning bush, was furnished by him with the convenient ability do miracles (Ex 4.1-9) and so very convincingly told his people that they were chosen to rule the world as a theocracy run by a priesthood (Ex 19.5). Much as they became that and much as the One God kept asserting to be singular (“you shall have no other gods beside me”, Ex 20.3), the Israelites weren’t all too convinced; the moment Moses turned his back - and much to the wrath of the One God - they preferred to cast a golden calf, dance around it and have a fertility party in good old Yatrus tradition (Ex 32).

The One God surely had a hard time winning against people’s Yatrus-mindedness. As long as two thousand years after Moses he still saw it necessary to appear to St. John in exemplary R6 god fashion - “his head and his hair were white as white wool, white as snow; his eyes were like a flame of fire, (. . .) and his voice was like the sound of many waters; in his right hand he held seven stars, from his mouth issued a sharp two-edged sword, and his face was like the sun shining in full strength”

(Rev 1.14-16) - and spoke out loud and hard against Yatrus, the “beast 666”, the “whore of Babylon” (Rev 13.18).

Ezekiel is full of this, too - R6 pictures by the truckload, angels, trumpets, cherubim's, and the clear message that the One God isn't fun-minded but wants obedience to the letter.

Yet the Israelites, “a stiff-necked people” (Ex 32.9), didn't seem to want to learn. Perhaps Xenu's One World claim sounded like too much hardship to them - and in that they were right, as their woeful future history amply shows. Perhaps it is because of this claim to world-ownership that Jews are looked at with suspicion by other races - quite undeservedly so considering how greatly many Jewish geniuses contributed to the cultures that hosted them. Not all who adhere to the Jewish religion are One Worlders, naturally, just as not all Moslems are Fundamentalists and not all

Christians Jesuits - but still: who was Moses? Whose side did he represent? Who is the god who spoke to him, to Abraham, Jacob, Ezekiel, St. John?

Now to the Roman Empire. With its “pax romana” (“Roman peace”) Rome is seen to have brought civilization to the barbarians - yet of what value was the peace they brought? True enough, with their roads, aqueducts, defensive walls and the Latin language, they created a military, civilian and linguistic communication network holding a vast empire together, a One World - but who counts the corpses? “Divide et impera” - split them up and thus rule. Polarity as a political method. If there isn't any, you create it.

Incidentally, Mr. Caesar, what did you do to the druids, their magic, their nature-spiritedness? There goes yet another minority wiped out by Roman sword blades. But who would need Yatrus inspired female-oriented cults anyway? Rome, very male and military, didn't. They replaced small ethnic units managed by tribal or family chiefs with a huge and impersonal organizational superstructure; their cities they laid out chessboard-like, in the fashion of a military camp. Whatever religion and philosophy they needed to satisfy the practical needs of people, they copied from the weakened, Yatrus-dominated, homosexual Greek culture; all else they uprooted²⁷. Very Marcabian, indeed.

In the end Rome, full-bellied, drunk and over-sexed, fell itself pray to the R6 bank, went down and who would come if not a cult built around the very cross the Romans used for executions? A cult cherishing the idea of victimizing oneself, of suffering for the sins of everybody, for the woes of the world. Very R6. Sorry Mr. Jesus Christ, you were a most misunderstood man - when you said “god” you didn't mean the One God. But instead of absorbing the philosophical simplicity of the Sermon on the Mount, people went wild on the R6 deco of a man dying on the cross and turned the centuries after Christ into a pageant of self-abnegation and theological animosities where Christians slaughtered Christians in greater numbers than the Romans ever managed²⁷.

When this after roughly 600 years seemed to flatten off, thing needed heating up a little and lo! - a man in the deserts of Arabia was spoken to by the archangel Gabriel who had his orders straight from the One God himself, and so that man went and dispensed with the female goddesses people had actually been quite content with for the last few thousand years, declared that there was no god but god, and emphasized the point by engaging upon a military quest that made him take half of Europe within decades only, driving his followers as far as India. One World, this time under the half-moon flag of Islam (yet another R6 symbol).

The Roman Church which by rights should have taken its wisdom from the New Testament, somehow mistook the old-testamentarian command towards One World rule given to the Israelites to be referring to Christianity, therefore felt entitled to challenge those under the half-moon banner and, in a mad attempt to be right, drew the Middle Ages into an orgy of blood. Crusades in the name of the Faith. A Catholic One World, headed by kings who as representatives of the One God himself, couldn't be but right no matter what aberration might have crossed their minds Spain, safely back in the hands of Catholic kings after the moors had been driven out, sends Christoph C. to sail to India in 1492, and he finds the Americas. Others are soon to follow. To make Aztec civilization crumble instantly, gold-greedy Cortez had but to show the cross to native kings and priests - such is the magic of that symbol. Particularly when combined with white ships coming up from behind the horizon, white ships carrying white men, white men evoking the images of white gods in fiery chariots, of missionaries from outer space, and last but not least, of the R6 gods embedded in the reactive bank.

Now the race is on: a Spanish One World, a Portuguese one, an English one, a French one, a Dutch one, a German one. Jesuits as the vanguard, hypnotizing the cross into the minds of the infidels, followed by soldiers and their cannons. First magic, then murder. Standard procedure. Hypnotized people are bad fighters.

In the early 17th century half of south Japan, so far quite happy with Shintoism (a female-type nature religion), kissed the feet of those bearing the cross only a few years after they were shown it. The shogun had the intruders killed and ordered Japan to shut itself off - until British cannons opened the clam in 1853. First the cross, then the cannons. Very Marcabian, very R6.

XENU'S MONOLOGUE

19th century - is the world taken yet? Not really. Bad show, Xenu, bad show - too many claiming ownership! Too much infighting. Religiously, it's Jews, Christians and Moslems against each other; commercially, it's the English, Spanish, Dutch, Portuguese and French. Those agents of yours - are they too overloaded with BTs and Clusters, do they touch the Screen too often during their extended stay on Earth? Or is it the old polarity principle again; setting your own guys up against each other, is that it? After all, you did manage to make the planet governable on the basis of three or four languages only, all of them European, all of them (including English) based on Latin and so One Language, really. Did you plan that already 2000 years earlier when you had

Caesar create the Roman One World? Has your long-range intention been effectively at work again?

Not too bad a show then, considering . . .

Now what are you going to do about America? New territory, seems to get out of hand a bit, people go there to be free, no controlling them, too far away from pope and king, what to do? Polarity, let's use some polarity - but how? Well, what have we got—there are the Jews, they have a banking network, they have money. There are the Freemasons, they have a political network, they have money. Anyone who is anyone in 18th century Europe is either Jewish (if a banker) or a Freemason (if a royalty). Now, let's see . . . There's the Bank of England, lovely institution, controls the British Crown and through the Crown the better part of the world. And there's Mr. Rothschild (Mayer Amchel), has just set up shop in Frankfurt and is already friends with the local royalty. And there's his son Nathan, gifted chap, let's send him over to England, he'll open a bank there. Now old Mayer Amchel Rothschild, he's ever so well connected, very useful indeed - we'll make him finance Adam Weishaupt and set up a new lodge, super-secret, lots of R6 symbols, the "Illuminati", 1776. Now let's have Weishaupt use old Rothschild's connections and get all the royalty into the new lodge ... Done. (It was no problem as we promised them we would snuff out the Catholic Church; royalty loves that. Polarity always works.) And now that we have made the key Freemasons secret members of the illuminati, we can easily slip our agents into all leading positions in Europe. And in the US.

It worked! They have put our symbols on the Great Seal of the USA. 1782. "Novus Ordo Saeculorum". The New World Order. And now that they have declared their independence, we can set them up against Europe. Polarity always wins.

And what did Nathan Rothschild do in the meantime? Took over the Bank of England, 1815. Good man.

Now what about China? Already 1840 and still not appropriated by anyone? Well, let's have our English agents pump some opium into them, that'll fix them. Brilliant idea, very R6. It works, too. China, a deflated giant.

Now what do I hear about France and Germany - despite the French Revolution they have gone back to royalty? The masses like their kings, it seems. Polarity, we need polarity . . . What's the time down there, anyway -1848? Alright, here's the plan: fire a mission off to Germany, have our Illuminati friends set up a new cult - let's say "communism"; sounds good, sounds like everything for everybody, and everybody as much worth as everybody else. Actually an idea stolen from Yatus, but never mind; the main thing is that the masses like it. The masses are run by their GEs; GEs fancy food, drink, sex, lazyness; they fancy "being equal" and "feeling united" against big bad individual thetans. "Communism" will appeal to GEs. The masses up against their leaders. Now who do we hire to write something up about it ... Mordechai Marx Levy? Why not. Never heard of him. As long as he can write. Call him Karl.

Now over on the other side of the Atlantic - what's the scene? Rothschild's people tried to found the Bank of America so we have someone posted to print our money, and some American president didn't like that? Polarity, polarity . . . Oh, goody, look at all those Negro's they have down south! Black and white, south and north, polarity built right into the country itself - let's set them up against each other, civil war, shake them up a bit, make times look dangerous, find a reason to introduce paper money, make them forget those awkward gold coins. Shoot Lincoln after it's over. Great stuff! Now we need to put some stability there and make sure it stays in the hands of the right people - Bank of England, you pump Rothschild money into the US, build up Rockefeller, Carnegie, Harriman.

Now, at long last, this Earth is becoming a decent Marcabian planet, all robots and machinery, oil, steel, railways.

And their politicians, in particular the US presidents, all proper Illuminati-style Freemasons? Good, good. Continue, down there. And make those Rockefellers control the money flows, will you? Shouldn't allow money to touch the hands of simple politicians or the people, of all things. Too precious for that. Federal Reserve System, Chase Manhattan Bank, that'll do. Oh - on banks: make them your temples, make them like the old one back in Jerusalem (and I still hate that Jesus for kicking my money changers out). Build them nice and high. Build skyscrapers. Makes our Marcabian missionaries feel ever so much at home. New York and Marcabian - twin cities.

Now what about Russia and their Czar? French revolution and the First World War didn't touch him? Illuminati network almost non-existent? No decent control over their banks yet what with them having more gold in their coffers than paper money in circulation? What polarities do we have here .. ? Hmmm, neither Europe nor Russia really took to communism, didn't seem to work - but there's this Lenin, and he's got an ax to grind with the Czar! Was kicked out of the country when he attempted to introduce communism to Russia in 1907. Now Mr. Rothschild's you have Max Warburg and Jakob Schiff give that Lenin a handful of millions, same with Trotsky, and send them both back to Russia. Communism - that's the thing, that's exactly what they *don't* need in a rural society. Lovely polarity, that- That Czar won't last a minute. If a world war didn't do it, this will. And before I forget, tell Stalin to put his boots on and get ready. Those Russian peasants need teaching a lesson. 1917 is a year they won't forget.

What's this report - our agents had some fanatic Jews warm up their ancient goals under the name of "Zionism"? And the Rothschilds got the British to back it up, all under the guise of "the right to return to the country of our forefathers"? Brilliant! From now on we'll have some *real* polarity going down there. 1917 is a year even I won't forget.

And later on we'll get Zionist bankers like Schiff and Warburg to finance Hitler, and Hitler will kill all the Jews, protected by the Vatican. One World Zionists against innocent Jews - what a joke! What a fantastic polarity!

Takes a Second World War to get this done, but never mind. And afterwards the world will be split in two blocks and be down to a singular polarity, a major polarity to cover all minor polarities: East and West, Communism and Capitalism, Dictatorship and Democracy - sounds so sweet one might even think it's true. "Newthink" and "newspeak" to get them educated. True Marcabian poetry. Like "Council of Foreign Relations" (CFR), for the organization which feeds Rockefeller's money to the media to create One World enthusiasm. Like "World Bank", to ensure that non-one in the whole world has any money. Like "Food and Drug Administration" (FDA), so they use psychiatric drugs and

Worthless food. Like "World Health Organization" (WHO) to supervise and facilitate heroin deals and the spreading of epidemics. Like "Food and Agriculture Organization" (FAO) to encourage farmers on the northern hemisphere to throw food away so that people on the southern hemisphere may starve better. And like "Ministry of Defense", for the guys who build the atom bombs at a rate to blow their planet up a thousand fold. Hmmm - what a treat! Atom bombs for export. Nuclear weapons forbidden by galactic law; nobody has them- but I do! And once they are exported, the galaxy is *mine*. Have to speed up the NASA on their space program, though, to make sure I get the goods before those dramatizing Earthlings wipe themselves out. It's all arranged already - plenty of nuclear warheads on either side. The place will be a graveyard with a lot of grass grown over the story before those stupid Galactic Patrol characters will become nosy again. And even if they did - there are my welltrained monitor BTs and Clusters, there's this magnificent Screen; should Earth ever recover they'll once again dramatize H-bombs dropped down volcanoes and they'll blow themselves up again - and again - and again. They'll *never* find out!^{45-49,80}

There is just one sore spot - Tibet. Buddhists - ugly people, don't believe in the One God, don't believe in me. 1950 . . . isn't that when they expect their next Buddha to come, the Maitreya? Better put a stop to that right away. Tell you what - we'll give them to their efficient next-door neighbors, the Chinese. Good old Mao will deal with them. As from 1950 they'll forget about their Nirvana - and they'll get to know *me*!

But - what in the name of the R6 gods is that?!? Do I see Elron down there? With an E-meter? Oh no . . . !! What a spoilsport! Wrecks my game just when I thought I had won it! 1968 - a black year. But perhaps - perhaps I could simply take his church away from him? Put some of my agents in there . . . ?

ONE WORLD, ONE VOTE

Put in a nutshell, how is this One World to be attained? By educating people over thousands of years. Recipe: one, take their stable data away (family, job, government), thus creating confusion; two, put false stable data there (Marcabian ones), thus settling the confusion.

Make life difficult; make problems seem unsolvable; make politicians look foolish and untrustworthy. Introduce - at the point of maximum confusion - a gigantic

new stable datum: the helping hand from outside the planet. Prepare the public mood by means of sci-fi films and toys. Make Earth population look with hope at those shiny black Marcabian space ships, representatives of a well-meaning, technologically advanced civilization who want all the best for the people of this planet. (Big PR act, TV, the press, public events, applause, cheers.)

And then the people of Earth, overwhelmed by the timely appearance and the unending goodness of their saviors, will join the Marcab Confederacy by popular vote (represented by the UN, their planetary government) - a voluntary decision on a democratic basis, precisely as stipulated by the Galactic Constitution. And no Galactic Patrol or Galactic Council can do or say; anything against it, because it's legal.

(As an afterthought - someone was nice enough to send me a clip from the fairly classy German weekly paper "Die Zeit", of Feb 26,1993. A front page headline referring to an article about who was to be Germany's next president, read (in English): "E.T. for President".)

A WHITE PLANET

Very noticeably - as historians like Carroll Quigley and Will Durant would agree - the major driving force in this One World scenario is the white race. Durant actually heads one chapter in Volume Two of his "Story of Civilization" with "The White Danger" and frankly calls whites "pirates"^{50,51}.

Before answering the question "how come?", we should perhaps take a brief glance over the involvement of the white race with world developments, that is, of the race of light-skinned, non-negroid, non-mongoloid Earthlings.

We already saw above that 4000 years ago - coinciding with the beginning of the Iron Age in Asia Minor - the One God appointed white Israelites to conquer the world for him; around the same time, white Aryans invaded the Indus valley, forcibly replaced the local female gods with their male gods whilst driving away the aboriginal dark-skinned population (up to this day Brahmins, the highest caste in India, are white); white explorers such as Phoenicians and Vikings discovered America long before Columbus did; Sumer and Egypt built world empires; Rome was founded by Scandinavian hordes coming to Italy around 1000 B.C. and, when it reached the peak of its self-satisfied debauchery 400 years after Christ, Germans and Goths, another lot of northerners, came down to pluck it like an overripe cherry.

From then on not only the whites but specifically the blond and blue-eyed ones were to be the tool of history, the fulfillers of the zeitgeist's requirements.

After the death of the Roman Empire it resurrected as the Roman Catholic Church. Same style, same thetans, same corruptness. The Latin world became a Christian world, and the Christian world some crusades and genocide's later, was white. For a brief spell in the 15th century, luck favored dark-haired, brown-eyed Spaniards

and Portuguese, long enough for Columbus and Magellan to make their fortunes, but once the New World was discovered the blond ones took over stronger than ever, rooted out the bronze and black ones and created the Americas and Australia in the image of the white man.

Following Quigley's argumentation's, three centuries were most significant in this development: the 18th, 19th and 20th. In the 18th the Agricultural Revolution made food production so efficient that one could afford to put farm laborers into steel mills where they built railways and trains; this led to the Transport Revolution and this consequently to the Industrial Revolution of the 19th century. The Transport Revolution came to be exported to non-white countries (colonies) who had had no Agricultural Revolution, who suffered from food problems despite all their labor being tied up in farming and who therefore had no free labor to produce steel themselves but nevertheless loved to possess a railway system, too, even for the price of going into debt to the industrialized nations. Yet being the proud owners of steam engines still didn't resolve their food problems and having neither manpower nor capital they were in no position to set up the Industrial Revolution characteristic of the 19th century. Deep in debt they hopelessly lagged behind. (With the exception of Japan.)

Due to the Agricultural Revolution then - it began in England in 1725 - England became the nation to eventually dominate the world. The ball was clearly in the field of the blond and blue-eyed ones, and those of other hues were set up for dependency from the start. Examples of this abound. To give just a few: when captain George Vancouver came in sight of Burrard Inlet in 1792, he declared the whole area British property without as much as setting a foot on land. New Hampshire, Maine, the Carolinas, New Jersey, Pennsylvania each belonged to individual proprietors, members of the English gentry who had received the land as grants from the king. To just mention the case of Maryland - Charles I granted Cecil Calvert (Lord Baltimore 28,000 square kilometers for a token exchange of as much as two beaver skins per year.

As a further boost to this imperialist development, the rediscovery of Pythagorean geometry made European physics and mathematics take off the ground. Pythagoras considered geometry as a way to take one's attention off the world and direct it the eternal, to intellectual perfection - and in that vein Europe began to look at "pure" science as a religious discipline. From now, man served science and not the reverse. (Knowing what we know about the Middle Implant with its "Objects" one may only wonder whose eternity Pythagoras had become entangled with and on what "intellectual" basis Europe's new science was formed!)

Apart from the Industrial Revolution, the 19th century saw plenty of explorers, adventurers and discoverers traveling the African jungles, cartographing the Himalayas, putting flags on the North and the South Pole, counting and cataloguing practically all plant and animal species on both hemispheres, visiting and describing "primitive" societies, writing dictionaries of their own and foreign languages, digging the ground to find traces of Greece and Rome, delving into the atomic and sub-atomic worlds, inventing novel chemicals and medicines, and so on. The whole planet was measured in its length and breadth, mapped out in detail, analyzed regarding its natural resources

such as metals and minerals - a general inventory had been done to prepare for the industrial, commercial and military exploitation of Earth.

As well, the 19th century saw the advent of a new science. Branched off from psychiatry it was called “experimental psychology” where the “reflexes” of dogs and rats were investigated with respect to certain “stimuli”. This led to the recognition that one could actually “condition” these reflexes and therefore predict behavior. These findings of Wilhelm Wundt and Ivan Pavlov were interpreted as applying to man as well, and as a result man was no longer seen in the image of god but in the image of rats; he came to be defined as a body, and psychology as a study of observable behavior patterns, whereas before it had been a “science of the mind” (literally translated). Rockefeller Foundations popularized these materialist concepts widely and took care of introducing “Educational Psychology” into all schools with the result that - guided by stellar personages like Stanley Hall, John Dewey, James McKeen Cattell, Edward Lee Thorndike and some others who used class rooms as well as rat cages as their laboratories - today’s school graduates have become unable to read and write⁵³. Eventually, mechanistic white psychology (and medicine) drove truly soul-centered technologies like witchcraft and shamanism to near-extinction.

The 20th century - well, don’t we know. America one superpower, Russia the other, Germany in between, England outside and above, two World Wars, the Cold War with its threats of atomic annihilation. Being ‘officially’ split in two parts (and secretly governed from central lodges), the white, blond, blue-eyed, Christian world had come close to being the One World, boastfully (if prematurely) announced by President George Bush on the occasion of the Gulf War against Saddam Hussein in 1992.

All by accident? Chance twists of fate? A blind zeitgeist at work?

If that were so - how does Albert Pike fit in, Grand Master of the Ancient and Acquired Scottish Rite (the top Masonic Lodge) and senior Illuminate of America, who designed a “world plan” in a letter written to a close collaborator in 1817, a world plan involving a first world war which was to break the power of the czar and bring Russia under the control of the Illuminati followed by a second world war to be caused by tensions between Zionists (i.e. Jews who turn their religion into a political ideology) and German nationalists, and rounded off by a third world war between Zionists and Arabs after the enforced installation of a Zionist state (today’s Israel).

Mind you, this was written in 1817! So was it prophecy, prediction - or a plan, the plan of a cool and calculating mind with unimaginable power at his fingertips?⁴⁸

And how would those who favor the theory of “the zeitgeist but blind fate”, interpret the predictions of Zbigniew Brzezinski high-ranking Illuminati-brother and advisor to US president who says in his book “Between two Ages”, written in 1970, that there will be technologies in the near future permitting secret non-military wars by deliberately caused weather changes and earthquakes, and who foresaw a “technotronic era”, his “ideal of sensible humanitarianism” where an elite is to keep tight and minute

control over the population by means of electronic data banks? What does that look like in retrospect, now that 24 years have passed? Prophecy or plan?⁴⁸

Not to mention a media world controlled by just a half dozen people, most of them white (Warner Brothers and Rupert Murdoch in the West, with Li Ka-shing & Son distributing their products through Star-TV in all of Asia), a media world promoting the Illuminati-designed and Rockefeller/Rothschild-sponsored One World ideals into every household via satellite TV. Pure chance or cool planning?

To quote Quigley (p.950): “There does exist, and has existed for a generation, an international Anglophile network which operates, to some extent, in the way the radical Right believes the Communists act. In fact, this network, which we may identify as the Round Table Groups, has no aversion to cooperating with the Communists, or any other groups, and frequently does so. I know of the operations of this network because I have studied it for twenty years and was permitted for two years, in the early 1960’s, to examine its papers and secret records. (. . .) in general my chief difference of opinion (with it) is that it wishes to remain unknown, and I believe its role in history is significant enough to be known.”

Why was the white world chosen to be flag bearer of Xenu’s One World? How come that impulse, that driving power to found “New Marcabia” on this Earth? Whence that greed for dominance?

To remind you - Earth population before Inc.2 was predominantly white. Neither those thetans nor their Genetic Entities ever left this planet. They were caught inside the Screen. And now that they walk about in bodies again, they want their planet back. They consider other races as “later imports”, as foreigners imposed on them through a galactic foreign aide program, as minor”, as “below them”. They, the whites, consider themselves the “master race” of old. It goes a long way back - think of Atlantis. And it can be dramatized with grand pomp as well as blood-curdling brutality - think of Hitler.

The Marcabians cleverly used this unreasoning, immoderate impulse, this instinctive self-righteousness, to drive their wedge in on this planet, to get a foot in the door and eventually take over. All it took was channeling a few thousand agents of the thetan-to-body variety to Earth over the past ten thousand years, and attaching a few hundred thousand Monitors to key personnel of the opposing side, i.e. the Galactic Patrol and other competitors (who used the white race as well, naturally, and for the same reason as the Marcabians).

And thus we get the rivalries, the bloodshed, the ups and downs, the dynamics so typical for this planet - eventually leading to impressive amounts of sophisticated weaponry but hardly any humanitarian progress.

5.3 In the Hands of Extraterrestrials

YATRUSCAN DELIGHTS * A PIGGYBACK SCENARIO *
LIZARD MEN * UFO MANEUVERS

YATRUSCAN DELIGHTS

Having concentrated in the last chapter on Xenu's role in the fate of Earth, we should now take a look at Yatrus. His influence, comparable to that of Xenu in magnitude, still differs in method in that he uses GEs instead of Monitors to control thetans. Because of the great identification of thetan and GE, this is an even more cunning trap. Where an alert thetan may still spot a foreign intention being played off on him by a distant Monitor (located in the space *around* the body), he will not as easily detect the GE to be the source of weird thoughts and pictures, because the GE and him pretty much share the same space! As her thoughts and pictures come from *within*, the thetan will naturally mistake them to be his own.

In the remote past way before Inc.2, Yatrus used gentle persuasion in recruiting new collaborators; he never implanted the thetan, as we already saw. By offering "unique opportunities" to fulfill the professional dreams of his eager and often unsuspecting followers (for example within the context of the Conversion Program) he tickled their intention to create, contribute and help but then slyly infiltrated and permeated their minds with his own purposes - if only with his seemingly supportive "see how far you can go with it" which would distort anyone's intentions however clean they might have been initially. But as this is very hard to notice onself, the thetans under his sway were and are not conscious of doing evil. They are ideologically *convinced* of their rightness, no matter what cruelty to man, plant or animal they may be committing. Inverted help is the recipe of Yatrus; destroying by helping.

Today one may expect to find Yatruscans mainly in the fields of medicine, organic chemistry and biology. The more glaring outgrowths of their work are vivisection, animal experimentation and of course, genetic engineering, yet not all they do meets the public eye. Many of them were in Yatrus's service since the days of Atlantis. Take a scientist who wildly wishes to experiment with bodies - not in order to heal but only to lustfully live out his bizarre and horrid fantasies. Such a person may still be dramatizing his pre-Atlantic body smashing experiments or his post Atlantic body engineering inventions. He never was through with that. Incomplete cycle of action. Well, give the man a concentration camp and you'll have a very satisfied scientist. And I'm not talking about the Nazis alone; any concentration camp would do, be it British, French, Spanish, Dutch, American, Japanese, Chinese or Yugoslavian.

To be fair it ought to be said that not all of those working in the medical or scientific field follow that sort of description. For every Yatruncan missionary there is a counter-missionary for sure - just think of the scientists mentioned in the section on "Fringe Medicine" in chapter 1.2, of great doctors winning victories over deadly

diseases, and of countless men and women sacrificing their life and health as nurses in times of pestilence, war and catastrophes.

Now supposing one were Yatus and wanted to attain total control over bodies and thereby thetans, too, one wouldn't like such people. What would one do about them? Simple! One would use their intention to help and pervert it by making them work on wrong targets so hard and self-sacrificingly that they wouldn't have a spare moment to notice which way they are going. This is being done in the daily routine of the modern physician in his practice or in his clinic. Most of them feel that practicing medicine in the way they do, is far from the ideals they had as young students. But they can't put their finger on what it is that's so wrong! Further, and again supposing one were Yatus, wouldn't one prefer to see all herbal healing eliminated? Because that wisdom certainly counter-acted one's plans of total GE control by means of artificially produced, non-organic drugs. So what would one do? Again simple: one would make sure that all ethnic groups are murdered who know anything about it (Red Indians, witches, shamans) and then extinguish the plants themselves by de-naturalizing their habitat, even to the extent of cutting down whole rain forests (containing vast amounts of forgotten healing substances).

To trigger this in the thetans involved (because, after all, it's thetans doing the actual destructive work) one would have to go through the GE Data Pool mentioned in chapter 1.2. To remind you - all information of the past including those on Atlantean lion-bodied, man-faced chimeras, are contained in the general GE Data Pool as "engrams". The act of making a chimera was connected with pain, unconsciousness and overwhelm and therefore recorded as an engram; it went against the basic survival programs of the GE (precisely the sort of thing Yatus enjoys most). Therefore, to get a thetan to have that sort of fantasy and actually make such things as chimeras, human clones and mutants, one would simply have to trigger the engram information recorded in the GE Data Pool and get the GE to dramatize them. (A clone is an artificial twin produced by manipulating cell division.) In particular thetans with a comparable past of their own in Atlantis would be receptive to that sort of imagery and promote the idea that one should do weird body experiments. War scenarios are very useful for this; they permit all sorts of studies under the pretense of healing and even allow this often perverted help to be called charity⁷⁸.

Instead of protesting such aberratedness, Earth people naively assume this to be superior knowledge, welcome Yatuscan scenarios in the hallowed halls of universities and inside the security premises of psychiatric wards, consider it progress - and thereby sanction vivisection, animal experimentation, in-vitro fertilization, chimpanzee mothers bearing human embryos, personality modification by brain surgery and brain transplantation, chemo-therapy, radiation therapy and genetic engineering. They even give such Yatuscan predilection a religious status, build sphinxes, paint animal-faced gods on Egyptian murals and feed virgins to bull-headed deities inhabiting mazes on the isle of Crete. That's older than R6, that's Yatus - the odd sides of Atlantis and before.

Any "energy cult", whether black or white, essentially attempts to draw power from the GE Pool and channel it to one's individual GE in order to gain control over

one's body, one's health and over other people. Be it meditating on one's chakras, performing sex magic in the style of Aleister Crowley or perhaps of Tantra, doing Reiki healing - any attempt to be "one with nature" or "one with creation" sets up an immediate resonance between one's individual GE and the Pool. It's like a betrothal between one's personal GE and Yatrus, making him everybody's forever bridegroom. Energy cults give one the impression that one were part of something larger than oneself and therefore lesser than energy. Although one's apparent command over nature through magic may reach "superhuman" dimensions, the magician as a thetan may in fact be kept nice and small. He himself is not the source of energy, so he believes, but something else is - prana, akasha, heavenly favors, mother nature. Good trick, that. Real magic, actually.

To give but a modest example of Yatruscan delights, take satanic rites in the style of Aleister Crowley, one of Yatrus representatives on this planet, take the blood-and-sex orgies staged in Prague, Berlin and Vienna in the 1930s, where kidnapped women and children were drugged, hypnotized, slaughtered, cut to pieces and then used for the sexual satisfaction of "honorable upstanding citizens" who wore outfits resembling those of Roman legionnaires which in turn go back to the decorative uniforms of early Atlantis. (This incident is taken from a session report.) Closer to the present one may find examples like that reported by the human rights organization "Terre des Femmes", whereby over the last few years, 40,000 young South-East Asian women and children were found to have been kidnapped and forced into Thai brothels. When they become useless they are often killed by cyanide injection. Nearly all victims were Aids-infected.

Not enough auditing on the subject of Yatruscan scenarios has been done yet as to estimate to what degree they caused the modern plague of AIDS or the great plagues of the Middle Ages. They do bear a familiar handwriting, though - infiltration and permeation (the infiltration of viruses into organisms, the permeation of organisms by "evil fluids").

Infiltration and permeation certainly show in blood plasma processing where the blood particles of many donors are "hoovered up", mixed together in a centrifuge, kept in a container and then distributed to other owners than the original one. A very ancient procedure indeed! If one really wanted to one could easily use this blood as a carrier of "special information" such as Aids viruses, for example. Not a far cry from that is organ transplantation. Again the infiltration of foreign entities into a closed organism. Survival by any means, no matter which ones. Full identification with the GE. The recent examples of mothers, brain-dead for months but giving birth to healthy babies, is yet another demonstration of how Yatrus-dominated modern medicine has become. The simple ways of nature are made needlessly complex.

Speaking from a Yatruscan viewpoint, an area of operation is the better the more secret and invisible it is. See how far you can go with it. Genetic engineering offers marvelous opportunities for this - think of plant and animal mutations caused by radiation, think of the recent applications to patent 2750 man-made variations to human DNA sequences, of artificial fertilization inside a test tube, of embryo splitting whereby one can produce a good dozen identical twins, use what one needs and store the rest in

the deep freeze for later. Delightful, isn't it? Put your sperm in the deep freeze, get sterilized, have as much sex as you like with no consequences - and if you really feel like it, your friendly nurse will produce a baby for you, in the test tube, of course; and if need be, a good dozen identical twins, too. Whenever you like. No inconvenience to the ladies. Very ancient procedures indeed. The urge to have "sex with no consequences" - a very old dramatization as we know from chapter 4.2 - popularized the antibaby pill. Innocent as it may appear, this little pill has had the rather surprising consequence of making *men* infertile, and not only men but even fish, whales and crocodiles. For 30 years genital deformities in men and the animals mentioned have been observed to be increasing, along with a lessening of sperm production and fertility. The pill has been on the market for a good 40 years. Ingested by hundreds of millions of women, it is excreted through their urine, enters the sewage system, the drinking water, the rivers, the sea . . . A very clandestine effect; very Yatruscan indeed!

A PIGGYBACK SCENARIO

Yatruscan operations have the body, it's health and its procreation as their target; these are areas represented by the GE. In scientology terms one would refer to the 2nd and 5th dynamic. In contrast, the targets of Xenu are control of groups and mankind (3rd and 4th dynamic). Some further observations will show that two usually ride piggyback; usually those of Yatrus are carried along by Xenu's activities.

Yatruscan "sexual liberation", for example, goes well with the Marcab-enforced estrangement of people from each other. People who are not firmly embedded in social sub-units such as families, tribes, villages or even clubs lack a sense of belonging, ancestry and history; they lack stable orientation points. The fashionable trend of being "single" can be seen as an expression of this rootlessness and certainly does not further a development towards true individuality. Singles are easy to control - by giving them some (false) stable data one relieves their confusion and they will follow one as if hypnotized. That sort of thing won't happen with a person who knows his worth, his background, and has a viewpoint of his own. In order to reduce such unwanted steadfastness, the Xenian side provides mental uniformity by "soft implanting" in the form of TV, video games, etc. This works right into the hands of the Yatruscans who assist by blending races, destroying ethnic subgroups and weakening family cohesion. So Xenu, in the attempt to dominate the 7th dynamic (thetans), makes the 2nd and 5th dynamics (families and bodies) a logical target for Yatrus.

As a result of this, marriage has become a bad joke as it is followed by divorce more likely than not, "female emancipation" has left countless children without a home, homosexuality gains equal rank to normal sexuality and in some countries is even granted marriage status. Instead of doing anything about it, psychology as well as sociology keep themselves busy explaining how "the system" brings about "new trends".

Xenu-type dramatizations like mass executions, prison camps, "special" police interrogations, psychiatric treatment by electric shock, slave trade, genocide's of ethnic

subgroups and other everyday occurrences - they always go along with Yatruscan dramatizations such as rape, mutilation of the sex organs or at least with inadequate living conditions leading to illness, starvation and a drawn-out, painful death. Brutal cattle transports, the fate of battery hens etc., belong as well in this category.

One has to use a body; one cannot help it. For most people on Earth, there is no way around this. Using a body means suffering. Add to that BTs and Clusters leading to aberrated games and aberrated games leading to further suffering, to GE restimulation, to more suffering, and you get the picture. Yatrus benefits from anything Xenu's implants may trigger. He rides along piggyback.

Take the USA as one particular example: slave trade and genocide, both Xenian Inc.2 dramatizations, were followed up by the very Yatruscan process, drawn out over generations, of Whites, Blacks, Indians and Chinese becoming intermingled. A new race, the "blended Californian", was created thereby (ironically against the original intentions of the early settlers who considered North America an Arcadia of the white man, by the will of the One God). This shows how "see how far you can go" turns an intention into its opposite, provided one waits long enough. Too much slave trade over too long a time began to affect the slave traders themselves - not the thetans, but their bodies, their genes and that way their GEs! The changes worked by Yatrus are slow, almost imperceptible - but of astounding consequences.

That such developments aren't always being left up to chance can be concluded from books like for example "Paneuropa", written in 1923 by the Austrian Kalergi, member of the Zionist B'hai B'rith lodge. He imagines Europe to be populated by a "Eurasian-Negroid future race" with typical Yatruscan characteristics like uninhibitedness, shiftness and untrustworthiness, a weak-willed race to be dominated by the Select Few - a plan not dissimilar to those of Xenu-representatives like Pike and Brzezinski.

Piggyback scenarios can be found anytime in history. Take the "development of trade and science in the 18th and 19th century" as a backwash to the conquering of the planet by the white races there came a flood of unknown drugs to Europe; a veritable drug revolution took place! Where before one was restricted to alcohol or, more esoterically, to the odd toadstool and deadly-nightshade, one was now free to use tea, coffee, tobacco, opium, morphine, LSD, heroin, cocaine. What would the world be without chemistry! No poison gas for the First World War, no bacterial weapons, no fun for the Yatrus-infected generals of Xenu.

And electronic surveillance, traditionally the domain of Xenu has come to be usurped by Yatrus, too! Inserting small computers into the brain "to increase its efficiency" isn't just a prediction of the "World Future Society" - it was probably tested out by the military already, and without anyone knowing! (Like most sensational developments, before they meet the eye of the public.) A similar nicety has been thought up by the city council of Hong Kong where it was decided for the year 1994 that the entire dog population of that city (roughly 165,000 dogs) is to be implanted with micro

chips containing medical data on each animal - for hygienic reasons, of course. What a good idea. Who is next? Or rather - who has it already without knowing?

Another example of Xenu's mind control attempts playing into the hands of Yatrus is sodium fluoride, an "innocent and harmless" substance added to drinking water and toothpaste, allegedly to facilitate teeth growth in children. Because of the tremendous problems this caused for people's health in general (ulcers, acne, cancer, teeth and bone diseases, disfigurement, death), fluoridation of drinking water has been banned in many countries, fortunately - but in our context of "clandestine scenarios" it's still worth looking at it. Why would anyone prescribe such a fatal substance under the guise of it being "healthy"? For an answer, one has to look for the "money trail". Sodium fluoride is a byproduct in the manufacture of aluminium. There was more of it than one could easily get rid of in form of rat and bug poison, particularly in the 1920's and 1930's which saw a skyrocketing in this industry. And so - bright idea! - Dr. Gerald Cox of the Aluminium Company of America (ALCOA) addressed dentists in 1937 on the wonders of fluoride and dentition. He was even published in the 1939 Journal of Dental Research. Yet this isn't all of the answer; there is a yet more sinister side to it. Prior to fluoridation ever being actually introduced to the public health System, it was known that Soviet studies had determined that fluoride ingestion could cause a docile, almost sheep-like obedience and demeanor in the general population. The Soviets had actually tested this in their Gulag Archipelago (a chain of concentration camps). Similar research was conducted by German Scientists as well, particularly in the chemical plant I.G. Farben.

One witness to this gave the following evidence: "The German chemists worked out a very ingenious and far-reaching plan of mass control which was submitted to and adopted by the German General Staff. This plan was to control the population in any given area through mass medication of drinking water supplies. (. . .) In this scheme of mass control, sodium fluoride Occupied a prominent place. (. . .) The real reason behind water fluoridation is not to benefit children's teeth (. . .) The real purpose behind water fluoridation is to reduce the resistance of the masses to domination and control and loss of liberty. (. . .) Any person who drinks artificially fluoridated water for a period of one year or more will never again be the same person, mentally or physically."⁵⁴

On the subject of mind control through electronic means one could go on forever. However, that is Xenu's department; it has been broadly reported on already by other authors⁵⁵. Let us therefore stay on Yatrus' side of the game and not speak about thetans and minds but bodies and GEs. The 1992 Gulf War incidentally gives a good example of a Xenian/Yatruscan piggyback dramatization, insofar as the anti-tank ammunition fired from airplanes contained atomic wastes (uranium) which of course caused radiation diseases in some soldiers. Added to this side-effect on body and GE were drug experiments on American soldiers done by American authorities. A doctor who refused to administer these drugs to unsuspecting soldiers, was put in jail for 30 months⁷⁸.

In this context the many war victims of this 20th century come to mind, a particularly sad chapter. At probably no other time in history were so many people killed within a hundred years. Starting 1894 when Japan attacked China, and ending in this year of 1994, the death toll is astounding: Japan against China, 22 million; civil war in Russia plus Stalin murdering peasants, 20 million; First World War, 12 million; Second World War, including ethnic genocide's and prison camps, 52 million; Mao making China safe for communism, 50 million; forty wars around the world since 1945, 5 million. Total, 160 million.

Who needs those dead bodies?

LIZARD MEN

In 1992, two auditors who, in their past lives, had experienced the same incident from different angles, reported on it independently from each other. It occurred in the late 1930s. One observed that dead bodies wrapped in plastic bags were taken to an underground factory in a western-US desert, to be put in huge cauldrons and boiled. The operators, although having humanoid bodies (arms, legs, etc.) were not Earth people. The bodies were boiled down to the consistency of protein jelly and then turned into small cubes. In color and material they looked like transparent soft plastic dice. The other of the two auditors, in that particular past life a US navy pilot, transported "cassettes" from Germany to that same underground set-up "somewhere in the desert, western USA". When he found out what load his plane actually carried, he committed suicide. The "cassettes" were made in a mass extinction camp in the far east of Germany or perhaps in Poland. Healthy and strong young men and children were singled out and killed slowly with electric shocks. Their GEs of course ridged up tremendously during this brutal treatment and threw all their survival-energies against it. In the end the GEs were so energized that one could "pluck" them and preserve them in "cassettes". The auditor could not explain this properly in terms of electronics but the fact remains that the life power, the living GEs of these young people were trapped in cassettes and taken to a US underground base by the planeload full. (This is before the US entered the Second World War against Germany.)

Any UFO buff will immediately think of the secret subterranean laboratories for human experimentation near for example Dulce, New Mexico. They make chimeras there, as eye witnesses reported - men with snake heads and such beauties. That the US government knows of this can be concluded from the fact that the NASA deem it necessary to have an "E.T. Law" (1211.100 Title 14) prescribing a quarantine to people after exposure to extra-terrestrials⁵⁶.

As well, UFOlogists report on abductions. Here is a session report on this: a 34-year old woman (let's call her Sue) found out that her sister was abducted by extraterrestrials in 1973. The girls had slept in neighboring rooms but could see each other. She was 14 years old then, her sister 17. Sue's body was in deep sleep at the time, the thetan was gone far away - yet her GE, always watchful, recorded the incident. The extraterrestrials somehow materialized in her sister's room, took her away and brought her back later. Her sister's GE had ridged up considerably; obviously something unpleasant had happened to her body. Sue's GE, in close contact with her sister's GE, had copied the information, and so Sue was able to read the data off her own GE in her session. Her sister had been taken to a space station and her ovaries were operated on. Six weeks later the girl was abducted again. A few years later she went mad and since then has spent her life in a psychiatric ward. The E.T.s looked reptiloid.

That extraterrestrials are predominantly interested in GEs can be seen from this session report of July 1994: A 36-year old woman asked for some auditing because her whole head and back were cramped and at night she ground her teeth with such force that she not only awoke from the noise but as well feared for her teeth. Her dentist had

told her that the whole thing was psychological. The following emerged: On 14 July 1990 she was alone at home. At 3 a.m. a tall, dark figure appeared outside her window, entered her room by passing through the wall, picked up deeply sleeping body and it outside where a space vehicle awaited the two. She was put on an operation table, her head immobilized within a helmet and her body sedated by drug injection. A thin tube was passed through her right nostril into her stomach. Through this five electric shocks were given, accompanied the words: "Now you belong to us!" This terrified the GE extremely and she decided to accept the lesson learned. (Incidentally the whole "film" was recorded by the GE as the thetan was present at the time of the incident which was during deep sleep. Then an operation was done and a tiny metal plate embedded in the upper right-hand jaw. There was no blood. The plate served as a device for locating and influencing the auditee. High frequency vibrations, continuously broadcast from the space ship, were to be picked up by this "antenna", which the GE would decode as fear and thus to influence or even overwhelm the thetan. After the operation was over, the woman was taken back to her room and bed. He as well as other crew members were described as unusually tall, slim and angular. They had only one eye in the middle of their forehead.

In the morning the woman woke up and almost didn't get out of bed. Of course she knew nothing of the night's events. She felt very sick and miserable. For two years she suffered from diarrhea and lack of appetite. A wart grew in her right nostril. She lacked concentration and experienced a general fearfulness, something entirely unknown to her previously. For days after the abduction she experienced strong aches in the jaw. Occasionally she tasted a secretion in her mouth which seemed to come from her jaw. She consulted her dentist on this who had her X-rayed but couldn't detect anything except a tiny spot in her jaw behind her right nostril which he didn't know how to interpret. (The day after the session she asked the dentist to show her X-ray photographs of her jaw taken before the incident in 1990. On these the spot didn't show.)

During the 6-hour session it became obvious that the space crew was monitoring the auditing and attempting to influence the GE via the metal plate. This made it hard to audit the GE. The crew were told that we were rehabilitating the Two Rights of a Thetan in context with Elron's game and that they should keep off. Giving these orders was accompanied by considerable discharges on the E-meter, which was interesting insofar as the auditee had no clue about the deeper significance of the words she was asked to give on. After this, continuing the session was no problem.

When the engram was "erased" the GE felt correspondingly relaxed and saw no further reason to resist the metal plate in the jaw. As "her" thetan was now fully informed about the incident, the GE felt she could rely on his watchfulness in the future and go back to routine activities. The dramatization was over; the fearfulness, secretions, backache and tooth grinding ceased. The broadcast vibrations certainly hadn't ceased as they were destined for more than one target person, but the GE wasn't restimulated by them any longer.

The reason why this woman had been made a target was evidently that her husband is active in the field of Tesla research. As he couldn't be got at personally (he is a good solo-auditor) attempts were made to stop him by influencing his wife.

Back to reptile men. They were seen more than once. On 3rd August 1992 a solo-auditor reported having spotted a space fleet from Sector 15; all staff and officers were lizard types. Auditing them on R6 materials, Inc.2 or Xenu connections didn't cause any response. The name of Yatrus, however, did produce discharges on the meter. Their job was to put their ships in a stationary orbit and to radiate microwaves towards circumscribed areas. Microwaves affect any water compound and therefore make human bodies vibrate. By resonance the GE/entities/thetan composite is affected emotionally. People are tuned down to hatefulness and start killing each other. Yet they don't do so with a quick stab of a knife or a bullet in the neck, they do it slowly and painfully. All the pre-Atlantic body cruelties are awakened in their GE-banks, played off on the thetan, and he behaves accordingly - in Vietnam, Laos, Cambodia, the Belgian Congo. Incidentally, at the time of the session the Lizard ship was working the area of Yugoslavia.

Their reason for making death drawn-out and torturous is the same as given above in the example of the Nazi death camp: they want the GE to ridge up until she has reached maximum energization at which point she gets "plucked", i.e. hoovered up into the load of the space ship waiting high up.

The auditor found out that the GE programs of the Lizards faulty which necessitated their feeding on the GEs of other races in order to keep their bodies going and be able to procreate. According to their own statement, they have been "grazing" Earth for 2600 years.

One Lizard fleet commander, after a lengthy session, debriefed on their background. (Session date 28 September 1993.) Originally, until about 14,000 years ago, they had humanoid flesh bodies. Then a team of Yatrus experimenters, headed by a certain Sham-Too and disguised as "cultural advisors to the government", arrived on their planet, promised eternal youth and propagated a planet-wide "youth cult". Bodies were supposed to be immortal, always healthy and forever young. People of course responded positively to this. Illness, old age and death was not foreign to their planet at all. The cultural advisors - with the agreement of the people and its government - stationed a few satellites around the planet. Their microwave radiation activated any and all reptile-type programs in the GE Pool of that planet, and as people were open and receptive to the purportedly "beneficial" vibrations they were taken unawares, the vibrations went in well and within a few generations of this treatment people turned half lizard, half human. Exposed to radiation for decades, their very genes eventually deformed and the lizard characteristics became hereditary⁵⁷.

It was not a "perfect" mutation, though, because Lizard men need to feed on foreign races' GEs to support themselves and procreate. They have to make up for their own lack of life force. In a way this is not different from our absorbing the life force of a carrot or a meat roast, except that we, needing to chew and digest things, do it on a less

direct route than them (they just slurp it up); but in principal it's the same process. Occasionally Lizard men will eat or by skin contact absorb actual body tissue, but more important to them is the living energy of the GE. They prefer GEs of their own former body type which resembled the Caucasian type of Earth (white race).

Earth people always had an inkling of this bio-fusion programming on and dramatized their fears of it variously - for example in their vampire legends. Vampires are known to "drink one's blood and make one become part of them". How true! Except it doesn't work by a bite in the neck but by more sophisticated means: vibratory responses between one's GE and the beams sent out by a Lizard ship build a bridge between one's own GE and their GEs, resulting in an information exchange between the two GE programs to the benefit of the Lizard GE and the detriment of the human GE, because the human body, as its sap is being depleted, grows old sooner and develops bone weakness, psoriasis and neurodermitis (skin diseases resulting in scales, very lizardy). Clients as well as solo-auditors with skin diseases found them healing after they discovered that they had been subjected to this mechanism and unknowingly tuned in to Lizard GE frequencies.

(This is not to say that *all* psoriasis is caused by Lizard attacks. After all, some engrams have to be there to get the disease triggered in the first place, and many nutritional, medicinal, mental and electromagnetic stimuli in one's environment may trigger them off, too. Lizard attacks may be considered as one contributing restimulator, though.)

UFOlogists are probably reminded of animal mutilation incidents at this point. Perhaps Lizards not only use human GEs and tissue for their procreation experiments but animal GEs and tissue, too. There has been no session report on this yet. However, it may be an explanation for the "creature storms" recorded Since 200 A.D. when it literally rains not only cats and dogs but as well lizards, insects, fish and frogs⁷⁷.

To slightly change the subject to the size of dinosaurs: although dinosaurs went extinct in the course of Inc.2, dinosaur imagery of course is still plentiful in the GE Pool of this planet. Time doesn't make it disappear. Most cultures have dragons as part of their fairy tales and their nature religions. There have always been youth cults, a yearning for eternal health and visions of physical immortality. On top of that, reptile toys and films have been intensely promoted for several years now. Knowing that it is in the survival interest of a race of lizard people to make us feel positive about reptiles, one may rightfully ask who really inspired films like "Victory" of 1984 (Earth people defending themselves against a reptile take-over), or the more recent and specifically pro-reptile "Ninja Turtles" and "Jurassic Park".

Not that scaly invaders hadn't been observed even earlier! They are known for longer than 5000 years. Ea or Enki, the oldest city in Sumeria, bore its name in honor of Oannes or Oe, a god of wisdom and patron of mankind. He was thought to live in a submarine palace. Surviving fragments of the "Babylonian History" written in Greek by the priest Berossus describe him as follows: "The whole body of the animal was like that of a fish; and it had under a fish's head another head, and also feet below, similar to those of a man, subjoined to the fish's tail. His voice, too, and language, were articulate

and human; and a representation of him is observed even to this day (...) When the sun is set, it was the custom of this Being to plunge again into the sea, and abide all night in the deep; for he was amphibious.”²² A long time later, around 200 B.C., the Greek traveler Pausanias could still see a pickled “triton” exhibited in the temple of Dionysus and described him thus: “Their bodies are bristling with very fine scales like a rough-skinned shark. They have gills behind the ears and a human nose (...) From the breast downwards they have a dolphin’s tail instead of feet.” A similar specimen, but female, was seen by Pausanias in a different temple²².

UFO MANEUVERS

In the section above, “abductions” were mentioned - a UFOlogist term meaning UFO crew kidnapping Earth people. One famous, inexplicable and therefore much thought about abduction was that of Frederick Valentich who disappeared together with his cessna over the sea area of Adelaide, Australia, on 21 October 1978. Valentich, then an Air Force pilot, was exceedingly interested in the subject of space ships, found out one or two things - and was admonished by his seniors not to overstep the line. He seemed to have put his finger on something hot. A while later, during a private flight in his Cessna, Valentich reported through his radio that he saw some strange object and checked with civilian as well as military air control towers if they had noted anything. Their answer was “no”. Valentich stayed on the microphone and described further what went on. The object pulled him up spiral-fashion, then one heard a metal-to-metal “clank” through the mike - and then silence. And that was the end of Valentich. No part of his body, no scrap of his plane were ever found.

It may seem peculiar that Valentich’s seniors told him to hold back a little on the subject of UFOs and that he should have had an accident shortly after. Not so peculiar if one knows the end of the story. It was found by FW in a 6-hour session on 28 February 1993.

In 1981, FW was on a passenger plane to Melbourne. In the area of Adelaide the plane went through a CAT (Clear Air Turbulance), shook violently but wasn’t damaged and soon after landed in Melbourne. FW got out, went to a book shop, was magnetically drawn to a book on Valentich’s disappearance three years earlier; whilst reading this book he suffered extreme stomach pains and head aches. This happened anytime later when he read a book that made him think. CATs are assumed to be “left-overs” of UFO activity in a certain area. Very true, as it turned out. Because inside the CAT, FW contacted the ridge Valentich had made during his abduction - which explains not only why FW had this uncanny interest in a book on Valentich but as well his stomach pains and head aches (as we shall see in a moment), and made it possible to discover what really had happened.

Valentich was pulled up by a space craft, his plane clanked to the body of the craft and stayed there by magnetic adhesion, Valentich is put on an operating table and undergoes some sort of surgery executed by a “biotechnical robot” in the presence of an Australian army officer. A control chip is put in the back of his head; at his solar plexus

(GE focus) the concept “Don’t think by yourself” is beamed. Then he is put to work in the space craft. He cannot move his body except on being commanded to execute specific jobs. The rest of the time he stands there as stiff as a window dummy - like many others who suffered the same fate. Any attempt to think own thoughts is immediately punished with extreme stomach pains. Some of the craft’s crew have “fish heads”. (Discovering all this during the auditing action discharged and dispersed the ridge and resolved FW’s pains.)

In a similar fashion, data about the famous “Rosswell crash” were found out. On 2 July 1947, a farmer saw a space ship crashing near Rosswell, New Mexico, alerted the press and the next day it was all over the papers. Small people with slit eyes were found near it, dead. They were “Greys”, as UFOlogists would say. Greys, although of human shape, are physiologically built like insects and have facet eyes. The military immediately ordered this to be hushed up and started a disinformation campaign on it. A few days later the press said it had been a weather balloon.

In a session on 9 November 93, more data on this came to light. Whilst traveling through New Mexico years before his session, a solo-auditor had picked up the ridge one of the Greys made before his death. Here is the story: the Gray ship collided with another space craft resembling the “Adamski type”. Their gravity fields somehow got in each other’s way. No aggression was involved; it happened by accident. They were in fact allies. The Greys, being insect-like robots and seemingly created for this job by genetic experimentation on some other planet, were much less emotional about the affair than the crew of the Adamski craft, consisting of one Earth man (described by the auditor as a “Nazi type”) and some rather outlandish looking blond and blue-eyed ones, certainly humanoid but too beautiful to be true. As the ridge of the Adamski crew was lumped up with that of the Gray and read well on the meter, the auditor could get a full debrief.

The “Nazi” was upset about the crash because he was afraid that their secret scenario was going to come out in the open. It consisted of infiltrating the humanoid beauties (sometimes called “Venusians” by UFOlogists) into the U.S. society, making them speak of “love” and “peace” and so distract from the real intention - which was to take over Earth at long last. (Mind you, it was 1947, two years after the end of World War II.) This plan was to be executed by raiding the US with space craft stationed in Antarctica, in alliance with Greys acting as “technical instructors”.

The background of this is that George Adamski, in 1952, had observed and photographed a certain type of space craft looking somewhat like a tropical hat of colonial times (which then came to be called “Adamski craft”). He claimed to have had personal contact with their crew, exceedingly beautiful blond and blue-eyed men and women who persuaded him to believe that they were Venusians. Amongst other symbols they used swastikas for their identification.

In a later session by the same solo-auditor, on 26 March 1994, the origin of these “Venusians” was recognized as different from the one stated by them. It looks as if they were the product of cloning experiments done with fertilized human ova (eggs) on Mars.

The ova are taken in a deep-frozen state from Earth to Mars. They are hatched on Mars; the whole “pregnancy” period is entirely artificial. As Mars doesn’t have a human GE Pool to feed energy to the growing embryos, GE power has to be hoovered up from Earth by space craft, similar to the technique described before with regard to Lizards but apparently executed by non-Lizards. It isn’t quite clear who does it; they might even be humans, because this story was discovered through auditing the ridge of an American Air Force pilot who was abducted, brain-operated to robotize him and make him “forget”, taken to the artificial Mars moon “Phobos” and put on duty there with no chance of ever returning. All of this was done by *Earth* agents. Sounds crazy, doesn’t it? But in the light of a few more data, it might even ring true. “In-vitro fertilization”, done for many years on Earth, means that a number of ova are taken from a woman’s ovary (who cannot get pregnant by ordinary means), put into a test tube and fertilized with the sperm of her husband. Of the fertilized ova, some are put back into the woman’s womb and with good luck she goes through an ordinary pregnancy and has a baby like any other mother would. Some other eggs, though, are deep frozen “just to be sure; in case we need them for you later”. As long as this is done between the 16th and 32nd cell division, the embryo can later be defrosted and cloned.

What happens with these embryos? Hundreds and hundreds of them are put into the deep-freeze year after year. Once the woman has become a happy mother, she won’t ask for them any more. The medical trade papers have noted (with alarm) that biological experiments were done to take such embryos through a full pregnancy by putting them into sheep or chimpanzees, or even create entirely artificial test-tube babies. Such experiments were successful but were interrupted “for ethical reasons”. Well, well. At any rate - it *can* be done. And still the question remains: where do the rest of them go? Thousands of deep-frozen human embryos - to Mars?

And regarding Antarctica - in 1938, the German Captain Ritscher undertook an expedition to Antarctica at the order of Hitler’s field-marshal Herrmann Goring; having arrived there, Ritscher legally annexed 200’000 sq.km and named it “New Schwabenland”. Heavy mining machinery for building underground tunnels was transported there every few months over many years. In 1945, the last year of the war, German submarine production reached a peak point. Some hundreds of submarines could never be accounted for after the war was over. Where had they gone? A former crew member gave evidence that a continuous stream of submarine parts had been transported by submarine to unknown locations.

In 1946/47 another expedition was done, this time ordered by the American government and led by the seasoned polar explorer Richard Byrd. Disguised as an exploration, it was in fact a military expedition - Admiral Byrd had 3000 men and an aircraft carrier under his command. Looking at his air route (you can see it in old school atlases), he seemed to be interested in New Schwabenland. Only a few months later, in March 1947, he withdrew and told the Chilean paper “El Mercurio” that the security of the poles was of supreme importance against a possible invasion. He had met extraterrestrials of the Venusian type and lost four planes in combat with them.

In 1953, Byrd went a second time to Antarctica, this time with track vehicles and a few thousand men, allegedly to cross the continent via the South Pole but more likely (as rumor has it) to yet again attempt entering New Schwabenland. Again he was beaten off. And since then there is the assumption that the Nazis have underground space stations in Neu Schwabenland.

Yet - and this is no rumor- the Nazis did have working “flying saucers” driven by turbines. Anti-gravity discs with tachion-generators were in their experimental stages. Called “Haunebu” they were expected to travel at 6000 km per hour and more, stay aloft for 55 hours and be fully “space-worthy”. Technical drawings of them make them look surprisingly alike Adamski craft (of which there are actual photographs) ... So all the bits mentioned above somehow fall into place. (And that the Germans were good at building underground fortifications was proved more than once during World War II.)^{58, 59, 60, 61}

CHAPTER 6

Defense by Telepathy

6.1 The Magicians' War

OCCULTISM WHITE AND BLACK * A FORMATION OF FORCES

After hearing so much about evil powers holding Earth in its grip, some readers may perhaps feel a bit discouraged. Yet it isn't as bad as it seems. The fact in itself that the events and circumstances of the previous three chapters could be discovered at all, means that no secret remains one forever, no intruder undetected.

Defense is possible - even attack! Because although a person, attempting to free himself from some unwanted attitude, emotion, sensation or pain by means of magic, shamanism, meditation or auditing, has it in his mind to defend himself, he does in the same instance attack, too. And he would even have the cooperation of his attacker! - since at the bottom of their hearts all thetans want to rejoin the "co-existence of static" outside all evilness.

Defense by telepathy is neither a new thing nor is it restricted to practitioners of certain schools of thought. It is in fact as old as the Vedas. Yoga and meditation, carried forward throughout the millennia by the Buddha's, gurus and swamis of the Far East and practiced by hundreds of thousands, has helped to clear the air on this planet and prepared its spiritual recovery. All along, meditation was the best defense Earth had, and possibly the only one, too - because before this age of nuclear power and space flight no-one would have been able to grasp that we were once wiped out by atom bombs and are now controlled by spacemen, and so no-one would have thought of attacking extraterrestrial powers.

Through the advanced understanding of the cosmos brought about by the 19th and 20th century, it became at long last comprehensible that aggressors from outer space might exist for real, and that they might be planning to colonize and exploit this planet. During the "golden age" of science fiction in the 1940s and no doubt with the help of some friendly missionaries - this new comprehension was widely communicated to the people of Earth. It was "only science fiction", of course - but a gigantic leap forward compared to the earlier "religious fiction" with its "fiery gods descending from the heavens".

By devising his particular methodology it is perhaps none other than Ron Hubbard who shifted gear from defense to attack. Whereas before one had had no other means except sitting down and "burning up" the masses wafting about one, Hubbard's approach to the mind in combination with new scientific paradigms made it possible to

find the source of those masses and engage in eye-to-eye (or rather mind-to-mind) combat with hostile thetans on their space craft.

To appreciate Hubbard's work one would have to understand against the background of an age long, universal struggle between black and white magicians in the best tradition of old Atlantis, a struggle that culminated in World War II with its atom bomb, symbol of Marcabian supremacy. It would go far beyond the limits of this book to prove in all detail that World War II a war between magicians, and that its military battles were the esoteric expression of enormous tensions between esoteric forces. But at least we can hint at it and refer the interested reader to further literature^{62, 65, 80}

OCCULTISM WHITE AND BLACK

When the Illuminati-brother Albert Pike, his letter and plan for world dominance from 1817 were mentioned earlier on, we did already get in touch with the games context leading up to World War 2. It went on in 1860 when Robert Wentworth Little founded the lodge of the Rosicrucians in England. By this act, Little merely announced officially that this already centuries-old brotherhood existed indeed, because Rosicrucians allegedly take their name from their founder in 1484, Christian Rosencreutz. This knight had traveled the Orient and was initiated into the secret lore of the Arabs, heavily suppressed by the Catholic Church. As a secret brotherhood and intimately related to the Freemasons, the Rosicrucians continued the general European tradition of Greek, Egyptian and Qabalistic occultism. That one of their 16th century exponents was the cosmologist Dr. Robert Fludd, said to be an incarnation of Hermes Trismegistos and reappearing recently as Franz Bardon, seems a clear indicator that Rosicrucians are representatives of "white magic". In the 18th century, though, their alchemistic lore had become forgotten and they reduced their performance to fairly embarrassing symbolic rites.

Occultism became the fashion of the day. In the 1880s, all sorts of secret societies were founded in France, England, Germany and America; most notable amongst them the Theosophic Society of Helena Petrovna Blavatsky. Madame Blavatsky, then roughly 50 years old, had spent a great part of her life traveling the East and saw Egypt, Africa and India; she had even gained entrance to Tibet, then off limits to all foreigners. This adventure-hungry, chain-smoking and hashish-loving lady who Claimed that the world is governed from the Himalayan caves by a small number of mahatmas (supreme spiritual teachers), brought new impulses to western occultism; she added the flavor, the terminology and the practices of the East - white magic again.

Right at that time the opposing forces landed a hit, too - quite unexpectedly in the seemingly clean and rational world of science. In 1881 Michelson and Morley "proved" in a fairly short and superficial experiment that the concept of ether was utterly "unscientific". The experiment was repeated at various times and directly caused Einstein's to abandon this concept in 1905. But perhaps they landed only half a hit, really - because good old European ether, just shown the door by infallible science, reentered the scene through a back door, with a little help by Madame Blavatsky and disguised under the name of "akasha". (Morley's pupil Dayton Miller demonstrated in 1933 how spurious the Michelson-Morley experiment really was; he used the same

experimental set-up and proved the exact opposite! But although the ether was allowed back in now, and although Einstein wrote positively about it, nobody seemed to want it. “Unscientific” proved to be a good and lasting label. Space was empty, and that was that!⁶³)

Helena Blavatsky died in 1891. From now on, two other persons representing different sides of the game, gained in importance: Rudolf Steiner, then 30 years old, and Aleister Crowley, then 16 years old.

Four years before Madame Blavatsky’s death, in 1887, the occult society “Golden Dawn”, a Rosicrucian splinter group, was founded in England. Some of the best minds of Britain, such as poet W.B. Yeats or the president of the Royal Society, Sir Gerald Kelly, were its members. Twelve years later, in 1898, Aleister Crowley as well joined the Golden Dawn. Crowley, financially independent and never married, was able to devote all his time to adventurous traveling and experimenting with occultism.

Perhaps his main characteristic was an insatiable greed for sexual satisfaction, no matter in what way. Small wonder that he should feel attracted by the O.T.O, the Ordo Templi Orientalis, founded by Carl Keller in 1901. The order’s secret was sexual magic, performed as sado-masochistic satanic rites, black masses and sex orgies complete with blood, excrement, oral, anal, homosexual and bisexual intercourse and sodomy with animals. Black magic in best Yatruscan style.

To pick up the other thread: Rudolf Steiner, in 1902 general secretary of the German section of the Theosophic Society, joined the O.T.O, too, and in 1906 became leader of its German branch, but then withdrew from it to found his Anthroposophic Society in 1912. In other words, he decided for white magic and right in the same year (1912) Crowley took leadership of the English section of the O.T.O.

One might well construe this to be a sundering of magic camps - particularly in view of the fact that around that time, three eminent white magicians descended to Earth to take bodies and get active: in 1909, Franz Bardon; in 1910, Mr. Mahesh (later Maharishi); in 1911, Ron Hubbard. That players of such importance assembled at this time can only mean that things were expected to come to a head.

The next confrontation between magic camps occurred between 1920 and 1922 when Crowley founded “Thelema”, his “monastery” in Sicily, and became head of the complete O.T.O. - whilst at the same time Yogananda began his lecture tour in the USA. No greater difference between two exponents of magic could be imagined! Crowley, under his motto: “Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the law; love is the law, love under will” lived a life of lust and wantonness on Sicily, prided himself on being the vile “beast 666” of St. John’s Revelation (Rev 13.18) and in fact did his utmost to live up to that reputation. On the one hand he helped himself to generous quantities of opium, cocaine, ether, morphine, heroin, hashish, laudanum, veronal and alcohol in order to keep his asthma down and his depressions in check, on the other he saw himself as a “world teacher”, a spokesman of cosmic powers, an “avatar”, i.e. a god in human form (perhaps Yatrus in person?). Even if one were willing to read all manner of

philosophic finesse into Crowley's dictum of "thelema" (Greek for "will"), one would have a hard time defending it in new of what Crowley factually did in order to subdue the world under his demonic visions⁶⁴.

"Love" was a mere cover for him to have his will - very Yatuscan indeed! And quite a contrast to Yogananda, the chast Hindu monk who after years of study with his guru Sri Yukteswar, came to the USA in 1920. Appearing on the stages of large assembly halls in dozens of cities, giving lectures and initiating some hundred thousand students into yoga, he took the nation by storm. When he had an appointment with Calvin Coolidge in 1927, he was the first Indian swami (wise man) to be received by an American president. With his book "Autobiography of a Yogi" he gave an unprecedented and broadly published account in popular language of the philosophy and practice of Hinduism right into the teeth of a world preparing for war.

The next clash between warring camps of magic - and this time not only as a temporal coincidence but in form of the physical confrontation between two magicians - came in 1941 when Franz Bardon was taken prisoner by Hitler's henchmen and asked to support Hitler. This demands some explanation. Let's begin with a few words on Hitler - he was fascinated with mysticism, occultism, yoga and magic. Various political as well as occult power groups worked through him to attain their ends^{62, 65}. Occasionally he suffered from powerful telepathic visions, served as a spiritualistic medium to unknown entities and often broke down physically under the strain. All sorts of spirits and demons seemed to use his body as a communication vehicle. He built strong links with certain Tibetan monastic groups of the black magic variety; when Berlin fell to the allied troops at the end of the war, they found about a thousand dead Tibetans in German uniforms amongst the debris of the Fuehrer's head quarters. The SS was organized on the strict pattern of the Societa Jesu (Jesuits); group meditation exercises in Tibetan fashion were routine. To ensure the "Endsieg" (final victory), any half way promising technique on the esoteric market was tested, etc. though these same techniques were forbidden to the people. Astrologers, spiritulistic mediums, pendulum experts, Indian tattva yogis and Japanese Zen monks were kept in secret "research centers" and utilized to pre-divine the run of the war, influence it fortuitously or work out drills to enhance the obedience and endurance of soldiers and officers. (The allies considered the occult background of the Third Reich important enough to raid all German libraries after the war, remove these materials and keep them locked and sealed to the present day^{46 62}).

The political stage at that time was stuffed with Xenian and Yatuscan props, perhaps with a disproportionate amount of Yatuscan ones. Mass killings during military actions, mass evacuation and extermination of civilians were certainly reminiscent of Inc.2 and therefore Xenian in character - but what about man farming to breed the blond and blue-eyed, the "new man", the "coming race"? What about the "vril society" (vril being something like cosmic prana)? What about the smithy of Hitlerian ideology, the "Thule Order", where Tibetan black magic was blended with the mythology of Nordic races, specifically of the idolized Aryans? ("Aryan" means "noble" in Sanskrit.) Isn't that tantamount to a yearning for the high days of Atlantis, for the Yatuscan glories following Xenu's Middle Implant? And of re-establishing the

supremacy of the white race by literally breeding them, extinguishing other races and by dominating the rest of the world by brute force?

Hitler belonged to a super-secret lodge called FOGC or the “Ninetyniners”. “FOGC” means “Freemasonic Order of the Golden Centuria”. There were only 99 such orders, each having 99 members; usually these were wealthy and influential people interested in even more material wealth and using black magic to that end. They specialized in “telepathic combat” and even used “tepaphones”, a telepathic device producing tremendous heat in the body of the victim, literally boiling him inwardly and eventually killing him. It worked over any distance. Understandably, this know-how was of tremendous importance for Hitler; it was *the* thing to eliminate enemy leaders with and so win the war. Yet he seemed to need the co-operation of the other FOGCs but didn’t seem to know how to contact them. He offered Franz Bardon, who had made himself a name as a *real* magician in the 1930s, any rank and office in the Nazi government if he’d only support Hitler and, most importantly, give him the locations around the world of the remaining 98 FOGCs. Bardon refused, was tortured, still refused and then was sentenced to death - yet escaped because Breslau concentration camp was bombarded before the execution could take place^{10,66}.

A FORMATION OF FORCES

In 1945, when atom bombs announced Xenu’s victory, a rather amusing get-together between Hubbard and Jack Parsons, a Crowley disciple, took place in California, showing that confrontations between magicians hadn’t stopped occurring yet. Hubbard had wanted to snoop about in the enemy camp, it seems, and considerably embarrassed Crowley^{64 72}.

Of higher importance, though, were the 1950s (incidentally the beginning of the age of Aquarius). They saw a tapping of hidden spiritual resources and a formation of forces against the now firmly established position of Xenu’s Marcabians. In 1950, Hubbard stepped into the limelight by publishing his “Dianetics, Modern Science of Mental Health”, thereby declaring war against the Xenu- and Yatrus-inspired psychiatry of his day, a psychiatry indulging in “cures” like electric shocks, cutting out parts of their patients’ brain and drugging them into unconsciousness. (Please note that literally translated, “psychiatrist” means “mind-doctor”, not “brain doctor”.)

In the same year, the Chinese healing gymnastics called tai-chi were made publicly available and introduced to the west. Before that, tai-chi was a secret tradition within a few families only who handed their particular styles down from father to son and taught their art under strictest confidentiality. That the Wang family decided to popularize tai-chi might be viewed as a definite move against the fully mechanized and soul-less Yatruscan medicine of Europe and America.

In 1956 Ravi Shankar arrived in America and initiated countless westerners not to meditation but to classical Indian music, right at the time when “beat music”, jazz and rock music began to form. Thanks to Ravi Shankar’s beneficial influence (in particular on the Beatles), the mechanized Marcabian, four-beats-to-the-bar humdrum

rhythms, threatening to take over all music, were kept within limits⁶⁷. (What they can do to life forms was demonstrated by the plant experiments referred to in chapter 1.2.)

A further revelation of knowledge so far kept confidential, was the appearance of Franz Bardon's three books on magic in 1957^{68, 69,70}. He had received the order to write and publish them he had received in a vision about twenty years earlier; it was given to him by Urgaya, according to Bardon a manifestation of the creator of the universe who with the help of twelve sages, guides the fate of the world from somewhere in the "Earth belt zone". Bardon was told to reveal the first four pages of the Book of Wisdom to the world - a demand so unexpected and shocking that he initially rather felt like refusing than complying.

One year later, in 1958, Maharishi Mahesh Yogi came to the west and found America and Europe already prepared and ready to receive eastern knowledge - thanks to Madame Blavatski, Ravi Shankar and of course, Paramhansa Yogananda. Of those two great Indian meditation teachers, Yogananda and Maharishi, we should speak some more.

Yogananda taught Kriya Yoga, a technique entrusted to him by his teacher Lahiri Mahasaya who again learned it from his guru Babaji. Originally Kriya Yoga was kept a strict secret and only to be used by swamis, i.e. people fully dedicated to attain spiritual awakening. The saint Babaji is said to have retrieved this technique after it had become forgotten and lost. Babaji is quite a mythical personage - neither his real name nor his birth and death dates are known; he has lived secluded in the Himalayas throughout hundreds of years (so says Yogananda) without any need to incarnate and reincarnate, since he is in full control of prana (life force) and thus able to create a body "out of thin air" when he needs one, or to permanently keep the one he has at a set age. Towards the end of the 19th century he told his main pupil, Lahiri Mahasaya, to spread Kriya Yoga far and wide whilst living the life of a "householder-yogi", i.e. a man who fulfills the societal duties of having a family and a job and at the same time progresses on a spiritual path - quite a novelty within the spiritual tradition of India!

Lahiri Mahasaya followed his master's command and spread Kriya Yoga widely within India and initiated hundreds of people. With the agreement of Babaji, he entitled Yogananda to export this technique to America and beginning in 1920, Yogananda did - again an unveiling of secret lore to all the world.

A similar story could be told about Maharishi Mahesh Yogi and his guru Swami Brahmananda Sarasvati, usually called "Gurudev", a grand old man in the strictest tradition of Hinduism. Gurudev had left his parents at the age of 12 to become a yogi, withdrew into the jungle for forty years and meditated. During this time he developed the mantra meditation technique now known under the name of Transcendental Meditation (TM). Around 1925, after his graduation in physics, Maharishi (then only Mr. Mahesh) was drawn into the circle around Gurudev, eventually accepted Gurudev as his guru and took on the title of Maharishi ("great seer"). At the behest of Gurudev, Maharishi was to take TM into the world. He arrived in Hawaii pretty much without a penny, and from there began his missionary work which soon spread all across the US

and finally reached Europe. When the Beatles became his disciples, he had it made. Thousands came to his ashrams (meditation centers) in India, America and Europe asking for their initiation.

Maharishi's aims are not limited to merely taking individual chelas (disciples) to their samadhi (enlightenment) but to relieve stress on a planetary scale. He works on the same theory as Hubbard in that he says (speaking in Hubbard's terms) that as soon as the balance between free theta and "enturbulated" theta is in favor of free theta, negative forces will be out-manuevered and positive developments can set in without being stopped. Says Charles F. Lutes, president of the U.S. branch of Maharishi's "Spiritual Regeneration Movement": "Maharishi's plan of action and aim embrace the whole world. It is his stated objective to redirect the course of humanity by means of the widest possible propagation of the knowledge and practice of Transcendental Meditation. To this end centers of meditation have been established in the major cities of most countries of the world."²⁴

Not a far cry from Hubbard's "Clear the planet!" However, Hubbard being Hubbard didn't quite word his aims as politely as the above; in his particular style it sounds like this: *"I'm not from this planet. Now if I can take it on that it would be a very good thing to clean up this planet, you who were here can damn well share in the responsibility and not say, it's all up to Ron!"*

The 1950s apparently were the "decade of clearing the planet". The next two chapters will deal with Hubbard's part in this project and that of his successors.

6.2 Hubbard's Attack

CLEARs IN TROUBLE * THE OT III BREAKTHROUGH *
HUBBARD RECRUITS LOYAL OFFICERS * A BLUNTED ATTACK

CLEARs IN TROUBLE

It took Hubbard a good thirty years to devise his techniques; after his death his work was continued by some of his followers. About this research, its difficulties, complications and results you are going to read in this chapter. ("Scientology" is not a new name, by the way. Already in 1934 it was used by the Austrian Dr. A. Nordenholz as the title for his book "Scientology - a Science on the Nature and Validity of Knowledge" ("Scientologie - Wissenschaft von der Beschaffenheit und der Tauglichkeit des Wissens").

Perhaps the word "research", sounding rather grand and impressive, ought to be clarified before presenting the results obtained through it. Any research done, whether by Hubbard or (outside the Church of Scientology) by his successors always concerned the alleviation of unwanted attitudes, emotions, sensations and pains. It was rarely done as a thing in its own right but rather served to find more practical approaches to "cracking cases" and relieving the complaints of auditees.

Therefore, when "contacts with extraterrestrials" are mentioned in this text, the auditor in question neither decided to go out space ship hunting that day nor was he after paranormal psychic abilities, rather he simply wanted to get rid of something that bothered him. He didn't feel quite as well that day as the day before, called up his case supervisor, asked for instructions and sat down with his meter to audit. This way unknown periods on time track were contacted and unheard of incidents found.

In 1950, "Dianetics" is published and becomes a bestseller Hubbard had audited 273 cases to gather the experience necessary to write this book⁷². Although Clear's were made, they proved to be very "shaky" Clear's, and Hubbard was exposed to considerable ridicule. What had gone wrong?

Various auditing reports of witnesses to the early days make it appear that Hubbard did some sort of "telepathic intelligence activities" in the late 1930s, whereby he devised methods to make a thetan leave his body and go off spying on Xenu and Yatus type scenarios.

The auditor in question (HJ) found himself engaged in three different investigations taking place in three different sites: one in Tibet where he witnessed heavy mining machinery being installed by German engineers, probably to find Uranium. The second site was Vienna where HJ slipped into the body of a man enjoying the Crowley style blood-and-sex orgy described earlier, and co-experienced it with him. The third site was in the Nevada desert where electronic devices inside a cave were to be investigated. The instruments, however, were of such type that HJ as thetan exterior

was spotted, hauled in and implanted. This was the end of the co-operation of HJ with Hubbard (until he came to get audited in his next life, i.e. his present one).

PS, another auditor, found out that he died in the course of an experimental session in the late 1940s. This explained his somewhat strained relationship with Hubbard in this life.

A third auditor, TJ, died in 1957. His report of the situation is so comprehensive that it's worth recounting in detail. Although TJ wrote it in 1992, before doing OT III, some details he mentions go beyond what is covered by Hubbard's OT III materials of 1968. Which means that already in 1957, at the time of TJ's death, he knew more about OT III than what was officially released ten years later.

In his report TJ confirms - without having read any biography on Hubbard - that Hubbard had gone through all sorts of rituals and rites to find out how "they did it" on Earth, had drawn out of them what seemed useful and eventually devised the rudiments of what was to become "dianetics". They met in 1947 and began to co-audit each other. TJ's name then was Robert Fuller.

To begin with, past lives, thetans and exteriorization were not part of their procedure. Between 1949 and 1952, though, these concepts evolved in gigantic forward leaps, largely because an oscilloscope was used - a huge machine, no dial and needle, just a tube with a fluorescent line that was either flat or showed "peaks" when charge was contacted. The technique was simple - you just followed up each and every peak to find its source. This way incidents far below the ordinary awareness level of people were found, amongst them implants. There was no peak that one wouldn't follow up. Lacking both proper procedures and experience one contacted huge "bubbles" of charge that way but didn't always deflate them. This caused considerable physical and emotional strain on the auditees involved.

Beginning 1950 the whole scene around Hubbard seemed to be under some sort of inexplicable pressure. One day Fuller received a strong electric jolt during a session, like a stroke of lightning going through him. The jolt seemed virtually aimed at him. They became worried. Dead bodies would be the worst PR one could imagine! Hubbard's group was rocked by other inexplicable phenomena, too. Certainly, spectacular results were attained through auditing; for example chronic psychosomatic complaints would disappear within minutes - but were followed shortly after by emotional crashes, body pains, even loss of memory. Engrams would be erased, only to re-appear again. Auditees and particularly Clears were confused, scared, shocked. Some simply disappeared, never to come back. People felt that auditing made them feel worse and that they were better off without it. This discouraging phase went on till 1954.

To explain these ups and downs Hubbard surmised that one dealing with dramatizations of old implants. But as they had already audited huge implants from trillions of years back (see "History of Man") - what could be left that might be even more powerful? Fuller assumed that they were dealing with a "strong control mechanism active in the present, not only influencing single people but also interacting

between people, and that this control mechanism is based on entities/ridges activated from outside via waves." Clears appeared to be purposely suppressed by "control entities" but didn't have sufficient training and awareness to counteract this influence. Hubbard developed techniques to make the thetan go exterior and fight the enemy, such as "technique 8-80" and "8-8008". The results seemed promising - but not for long, because "the people up there in their control stations became aware of what was going on here on Earth and increased their control."

The situation seemed hopeless. In 1954 they decided to change over to lighter processes in order to make it easier on the public. The research group, consisting of no more than three members, separated as they felt they were drawing too much attention from whoever it might be. They pretended to be non-existent. After a pause of three years, in 1957, there was a last meeting. They agreed to make it appear as if scientology was going the wrong way and did not function at all, in order to mollify the controlling powers and make them less watchful. Hubbard proposed that one of them should be "sacrificed" to mislead the enemy, after the tune of "key scientology researcher commits suicide out of frustration about scientology being a huge error". After heated discussions Fuller agrees to be the one. He has no children, his wife died a few years earlier. The decision isn't easy on him because firstly one doesn't know who is behind the attacks, secondly one can't be sure if the ruse is going to work, thirdly Fuller would have preferred to continue their research by more ordinary means.

In 1957 he jumps off the Hoover Dam, kills his body, exteriorizes and receives the "Standard Screen Treatment for Thetans on Their Way Out". This includes a high court questioning him on his sins, sitting in judgment over him and sending him away again. It includes the impression of being bodily strapped to a chair, getting pictures of houses, cars and landscapes with a voice randomly uttering engineering-type information and simultaneous heat/cold/electrical treatment to his illusory body. Sometimes the chair spins wildly. The voice gives "good advice" like "Be calm. Be quiet. Sleep." Towards the end of the treatment he "tries on" various bodies of soft plastic material with definite sex organs and receives pleasurable sexual titillation's. This way he is joined up with a GE. Then he is exposed to pictures of thetans being transported to Earth in ice blocks. He is "funneled" inescapably in the direction of his body, enters it (no choice) and is born.

This report and the "ice cubes" mentioned by Hubbard in "History of Man" would mean that Hubbard became aware of Xenu-type installations as early as 1952, i.e. fifteen years before OT III was released to the public. It is likely, however, that he was misled by the Screen at that time and didn't perceive the totality of Xenu's control scenario yet. Hubbard did know of Yatruss, though. TJ wrote a letter to me in early 1989, at a time when neither I nor anyone I knew had ever heard that name, and described the "games constellation" he saw himself involved in the 50's. He mentioned Ron, Xenu, Yatruss (he called him "Heliatross"), himself and some further players and opponents.

It would indeed make sense that Hubbard knew Yatruss. One doesn't have to go back as far as the Conversion Program to assume that (when the two were at loggerheads with each other). The mere fact that Hubbard wrote "Dianetics" speaks for

it, because “Dianetics”, as it aims at freeing the thetan from the burden of an aberrated GE and making him “Clear”, essentially attempts to reverse the effects of the Middle Implant when GE and thetan were forcibly married for all time to come - the scheme of Yatrus.

THE OT III BREAKTHROUGH

So much on Fuller’s report. The next few decades of research, from 1957 to 1978, are covered fairly well by Hubbard’s books, tapes and bulletins. The story in brief: dianetic auditing turned out to be too crude a tool for reliably making Clears. Telepathic “enemy cross-fire” added unexpected complications. Hubbard then assumed that it would be sufficient to exteriorize a thetan from his body to make a Clear but found that a thetan despite being exterior was still connected to entities and that the reactive bank therefore wasn’t limited to the engrams of the GE bank. He had to recognize that there was a thetan bank, too, and that this thetan bank was dragged along by a thetan from life to life and body to body. He discovered that thetan banks are built on the principle of opposing goals creating a mass when restimulated, and named them “Goals Problems Masses” or “GPMs”. Researching GPMs led up to the Middle Implant and so, with the release of the Clearing Course in 1965, a culmination point was reached. GPMs were worked on by scores of auditors, each auditing hundreds of hours on them.

Yet neither dianetics auditing nor exteriorization processes or “running GPMs” really brought the expected result. Clears were never fully “cause over mental nest” as the definition of this state required. Their state was brittle. Indeed, some bank imagery could be successfully recognized and handled by them but apart from that they seemed to be affected by something yet unrecognized.

Hubbard took his attention off Yatrus and the GE/thetan connectedness and concentrated on the “strings” thetans appeared to hang on. The breakthrough came in 1968 when OT III was released. Xenu and his implants - that was it; that seemed to be the real reason for the troubles one had had. Thousands of solo-auditors around the world located and audited BTs and Clusters, thus thinning out the dark masses around this planet. And there were Certainly enough of them to keep one busy. The attack was on.

Hubbard’s job seemed done and his mission fulfilled. He took a break from researching and for the next ten years (1968-1978) summarized “the tech” in form of loose-leaf bulletins” and taped lectures. As well he wrote two science-fiction books, “Battlefield Earth” and “Mission Earth”, and the film script “Revolt in the Stars”.

HUBBARD RECRUITS LOYAL OFFICERS

The research for OT III, its release and subsequent delivery to the public were to put a stamp, a branding mark on Hubbard’s Church which was never going to be

removed. Some peculiar features, adopted then, stayed with it for good. To start with, OT III research had been done on a small fleet of ships, the "Sea Organization". The public had to go there to do their OT III. Hubbard purposefully had chosen dark-blue uniforms when he started the "Sea Project" in 1966 - because similar uniforms and the Sea Org emblem (a five-pointed star embraced by two laurel branches) had been worn by loyal officers during Inc.2. Hubbard's purpose was to evoke memories of Inc.2 and awaken some of his staff to their old goals. The Sea Org motto "We Come Back!" speaks for itself.

Not only was the Sea Org started on a calculated restimulation the public was addressed in the same way. On the dust covers of any scientology book you can see R6-motives: spacemen loading boxes into a space craft, an image of the R6 god, angels, an exploding volcano, a railway train, and so on. Hubbard expected to get people going again - and the ruse worked. In fact it worked for both sides! Both parties involved in the old battle were magically attracted by the Sea Org and its uniforms, and the re-created tensions between former loyal officers and former Xenu renegades nearly tore the Church of Scientology apart more than once. Battling is all they had in mind, on either side. Their confrontation was made complicated, because during Inc.2 (as you may remember from chapter 3.1) many loyal officers had been captured, taken to Coltus and given an implant turning them against their own cause - therefore, seeing Sea Organization uniforms would evoke the reverse vector in them. They would join the Sea Org and do the exact opposite of what they were supposed to. Perfectly incomprehensible! A lot of the super-security and paranoia of the Church of Scientology can be put to this explosive mixture of fanatic obedience, mission-obsessedness and treachery. It would as well explain the vast amount of mistakes that were made, the hair-raising incompetence and the harsh humiliations Sea Org staff were prepared to suffer from the hand of Hubbard.

To top it, Hubbard himself had appeared at this particular historical point to make up for the omissions of his own remote past, and he certainly was all determined to succeed this time. But he couldn't go about it in a leisurely fashion at all - since he saw himself engaged in a race against the atom bomb! It was either auditing Inc.2 real quick or Inc.2 all over again. This might explain the urgency, impatience and ill-temperedness for which Hubbard was feared.

Considering these circumstances one can well imagine that scientology, its Church and particularly the Sea Org, consisting mostly of freshly awakened loyal officers, looked somewhat odd to the ordinary R6-happy Earth citizen. (It still does.)

A BLUNTED ATTACK

Despite Hubbard's high-flying expectations of 1968, OT III didn't clear people as brilliantly as predicted. The level had splendid results in many cases (and still does) - but it didn't handle *all* of the case. Unwanted masses and energies still pressed inexplicably on thetan and body.

One reason for this can be found in Hubbard's having taking a break. His withdrawal from OT III supervision caused a severe set-back, because he had left without proper instructions concerning the supervision of solo-auditors. Perhaps he had relied too much on the ability of those few he had trained personally on the ship, when he sent them to the Advanced Organizations around the globe to introduce OT m there and hand on what they had learnt. From the results they obtained one can only surmise that they had not learned enough. Hubbard's message did hit home and all of scientology went OT III crazy - but results were not uniformly attained. Within ten years, the practice of OT III solo-auditing became but a shallow imitation of what it had been originally. What was promised was not delivered. People broke with scientology in frustration.

On lower levels, below Clear, auditing was sufficiently successful for the Church to expand hugely in the 70's - yet concerning the OT levels the picture was bleak indeed. Supervisors were so badly trained that they failed to help their solo-auditors as soon as the going got rough. The Church of Scientology, Hubbard's instrument for fighting Xenu, had become so confused and tense, so affected by the very level it was supposed to deliver to the world that it became almost useless.

The attack had become blunted.

6.3 The Battle Goes On

A NEW CHURCH * EXCALIBUR * GALACTIC ADMINISTRATION *
XENU IN SESSION * A NEW TYPE OF CLEAR *
YATRUS GETS AUDITING * THE GE POOL * "GERD" *
THE PHI MATRIX * DEPROGRAMMING THE SCREEN *
THE "M-SHIP" IN ORBIT * FUTURE PROJECTS

A NEW CHURCH

In 1981 Hubbard disappeared from view, withdrew to his ranch and remained there till he died. Concurrent with his disappearance, a team of executives usurped the Church of Scientology ("CofS" from now) in an overnight power coup. As "Religious Technology Center" (RTC) they commenced their reign with the excommunication of a good 2000 veteran staff members many of whom had known Hubbard personally, amongst them a lot of auditors. The reason for this bloodletting is perhaps that they attempted to exterminate the living memory of the great leader and replace it by their own indoctrination - done in the form of splendid, glittery and expensive events not dissimilar to the political shows of Hitler, Stalin and Mao or perhaps the American presidential election campaigns. Rows of officers in white uniforms, huge OT symbols and CofS crosses, a stage bathed in light, the idolized speaker on the rostrum, the enraptured thousands at his feet - who wouldn't think of Xenu's best times as Supreme Ruler of the Galactic Confederation or, even earlier, of some Grand Ritual of the Atlantean priesthood?

Not that Hubbard hadn't foreseen such developments. He was never all too happy with his Church (witness several volumes of management policies), yet even before there was a Church he could see the dangers involved in the organized application of his own brain child. In 1952, during lecture 20 of the Philadelphia Doctorate Course, he said this about scientology: *"It's a servant of the mind, (. . .) it's not a master of the mind. Scientology will decline and become useless to man on the day when it becomes the master of thinking. Don't think it won't do that. It has every capability in it of doing that. Contained in the knowable, workable portions before your-eyes there are methods of controlling human beings and thetans which have never before been dreamed of in this universe. Control mechanisms of such awesome and solid proportions that if the remedies were not so much easier to apply, one would be appalled at the danger to beingness that exists in scientology. (...) Did you ever read poor old George Orwell's "1984"? Yes, that's wonderful. That would be, could be the palest imaginable shadow of what a world would be like under the rule of the secret use of scientology with no remedy in existence."*

EXCALIBUR

Those that were kicked out of the CofS carried on outside. Many small centers formed around individual auditors. In terms of research William Brenton Robertson, a

long-time Sea Org member, carried on along the line of Hubbard's intentions. In 1985, on the basis of existing OT levels, he developed from it a process which detected and handled the BTs and Clusters forming Xenu's suppressive monitor installations. Finally the cause of so far inexplicable phenomena bothering OT III and NOTs solo auditors was found. In honor of Hubbard's novel of 1938, Robertson called this process "Excalibur".

Because of his former CofS connections Robertson and his associates were in the position to put together an impressive list of ex-CofS auditors all around the world, contacted them and taught them the new method. Soon the old Galactic Patrol fighting spirit was alive again and gained momentum. Xenu's network, now the target of sessions all around the globe 24 hours a day, was being torn from all corners at once. Hubbard's old OT III battle of 1968 had received a fresh impetus in 1985, seventeen years later.

To start with, Excalibur worked simply like this: BTs and Clusters were found, audited and dissolved into clouds of theta quanta; these were made to vanish into nothingness. No problem. Not very different from auditing OT III - except that BTs were sent right through the 36 days, something severely warned against on OT III proper so as to avoid over-restimulation. But on Excalibur it was a safe thing to do and this way a lot was found out confirming everything Hubbard had ever released to the public about this particular imagery and often going beyond it.

The next "generation" of BTs were different. Although they could be made to disappear during the session (often after a good 5 hours of hard work on a single BT or Cluster), they "grew back" over night - as if they had never gone away! Auditing them again (and again and again, day after day) revealed that each one leaving was replaced by identical installations within some hours only. It dawned on Robertson and his associates that one was not dealing with the dead remnants of 75 million years ago but with an alive and awake control system. It was at this time (still in 1985) that the term "Monitor" was coined.

Soon the Monitors' organizing scheme began to show. One would begin with the BT that had "cut in" on one, audit it until the next one up the line, in the attempt to keep the one below from communicating, came to view and audit that one. One carried on this way until one had reached the "top holder" in the system. Once the top holder was audited, one would go down the line again and mop up the rest. Their stories were near-identical: Inc.2, packaged on Hawaii and Las Palmas, shelved, prepared for use by a special implant ("trained on their man"), and sent off.

The conclusions Hubbard and his associate Fuller had to come to in 1950 were reciprocated by Robertson in 1985. The difference was that after almost 20 years of OT III auditing having occurred all around the globe (1968 to 1985) the sheer amount of BTs and Clusters was considerably reduced; Robertson wasn't faced with quite the same resistance as Hubbard.

With that advantage and recognizing that one was engaged in a live battle, one could concentrate on fighting the actual enemy instead of his ammunition, the Monitors (which despite all the auditing already done still seemed inexhaustible). For example in the case of Monitors being replaced overnight the auditor would extend his attention to the originating end of the communication line to find out *who* was doing the replacing - and discover control stations! Some on space stations, others on Mars or remote planets outside this solar system, some even on Earth (Pyrenees). These stations weren't BT imagery, no figments of imagination - they were real, manned by real thetans.

Instead of merely auditing the BTs and Monitors sent to Robertson and his auditors, they proceeded to audit the operators supervising them on their computer screens. They helped these thetans to get rid of their own control entities which kept *them* in line, made them switch off the power supply, leave their bodies and go off. This was easy insofar as their job satisfaction wasn't particularly high (what with ten thousand years on the same post), and since their understanding of what they were doing was limited due to instruction by implant exclusively, it didn't take much to convince them that there was more fun to be had elsewhere, with more ethical purposes. Leaving their bodies was no problem to them as they didn't use flesh bodies.

Yet these were no "friendly conversations" by any means. On first contact those operators had absolutely no intention to be in session. Auditors had all the enemy propaganda against them. At one stage the operators were trained in what to do when caught by an auditor and how to behave in session to get out unscathed. That didn't work, of course, because thetans like truth - a major advantage over their implant-distorted minds.

In 1986, after one year of Excalibur auditing all around the world, there were signs of the enemy's morale weakening. It was often sufficient to mention that one was working for Elron to get a resigned "Oh, not again!", and key people of the opposing side would agree to be audited without any further resistance. This continued throughout the hot phases of Excalibur between 1986 and 1988. Every three months the case would present a different pattern, because the enemy had worked out something new to cross Robertson's purposes. This would be reported to Robertson and communicated by telephone to all other auditors, and so one was prepared for the "novelty" to come up. Or one would bump into a novelty, not know what to do, phone Robertson and learn that he already knew about it from his own or another's sessions. This system worked very well.

GALACTIC ADMINISTRATION

During this time, a lot was found out about the organization and administration of this galaxy. It was usually Robertson who originated these data, but since they were confirmed by others who hadn't been briefed on them, it seems safe to say a few words about this.

It seems that the galaxy is divided into 12 sections (pretty much like a birthday cake), with each section cut in half. So there are twelve “sectors” on top and twelve on the bottom, making 24 all in all. Our sector (within which Incident 2 took place) is Sector 9. Sector 0 is the administrative unit in the center of the galaxy; so strictly speaking there are 25 sectors.

Sector 0, the “Galactic Council”, is to the galaxy what the UN is to Earth - well-intended, infiltrated, inefficient. They do not interfere by police or military means unless someone complains about someone else. One reason why they didn’t ever do anything about Earth is that nobody from Earth complained. We know why - the Screen didn’t let any Earth people out; Earth was and is politically too disorganized and spiritually too unaware as to even think of complaining; in galactic terms it’s nowhere land anyway. Missionaries who do manage to come back from Earth tend to report in a confused and unreliable manner; it’s like you were sending an agent into a disaster area and he came back all drunk and unable to speak sensibly. For this reason direct telepathic messages by auditors (and others, one should assume) are not immediately acted upon but left to accumulate. Only when a large enough pack of data accumulated would it be interpreted and acted upon. Therefore, regarding Earth, decisions are slow. (This may have changed after one auditor who is a Galactic Council member on Earth duty - he got stuck here, never got away again - gave a direct debrief to his colleagues on 12 March 1994.) Some in the Council believe that the best solution for Earth was letting it go to hell or actively wiping it out - but fortunately they know that this wouldn’t be the end of the problem but actually spread the contamination and make things worse.

The Galactic Council consists of 12 members. They appear awe-inspiring and wise but are not entirely free of the reactive bank. Their bodies are somewhat transparent, not nearly as solid as ours. The Council is not a democratic but an aristocratic body in the true sense of the word - “aristocracy” meaning “rule of the noble ones”. Nobility again isn’t a matter of heritage but of ethical performance, of contributing to the common good in high volume. Each of the 12 governs two Sectors but doesn’t “represent” them as he wasn’t voted into his seat by “the people”. He has worked his way up to this seat of power and once in it, he stays there forever- unless his integrity weakens.

XENU IN SESSION

The peak event of Excalibur, already within a year after this action had been launched, was the auditing of Xenu himself. In due course, after losing so much manpower and machinery, the Black Master himself had to show up and interfere personally. About six auditors I know of, had direct confrontations with him. They had all known him before, either as Loyal Officers during Inc.2 or long before that. Robertson as supervisor coordinated the action.

Auditing Xenu was quite exhausting indeed. After the session one felt like one had been hanging on to a high-voltage power line for some hours, with one’s feet in the bath tub. When one dealt with his troops or even some of his suppressive BTs, one

might have been hit with energy discharges strong enough to make one hop about the room whilst sitting on one's chair, but with Xenu it was different: there was some mighty and far-reaching power behind him, quite beyond anything one was used to from his staff.

To start with, Xenu showed up in the sessions of Robertson and his closer associates only; later, as he and his network became weaker and weaker, he started appearing in the sessions of other auditors, too. In 1993 his basic games postulate was discovered and audited (see chapter 3.3). Since then he is out of the game with no intention to start on it again. But of course, the spirit of his game is carried forward by all who share this postulate and identify with it still - it's the need to have a mest universe.

A NEW TYPE OF CLEAR

By the end of 1988, the Excalibur battles had seen their peak times. Holes had been cut into Xenu's network; the global and even galactic connections one had encountered before whilst following up a specific BT organization, were a thing of the past. The remaining BTs, Clusters and Monitors were merely part of people's individual cases. Auditing them was still exciting to new solo-auditors, but compared to before it had become a cushy job.

Those who experienced the proper end phenomenon of this level of auditing saw their thoughts and actions not interfered with any further by BTs, Cluster, Monitors or any other kind of entity.

Their awareness was trained sufficiently to detect and handle such phenomena even without an E-meter and even before an incoming entity had the chance to settle down in their theta space. People who finish Excalibur properly are "more themselves" and, as their GEs don't get continuous cross-fire from entities gone wild, their bodies are healthier than before. Their own thinking and acting, unencumbered and unbiased by foreign influences, can come to the fore now. They are Clear on the 3rd and 4th dynamic and so their ability to live and think sanely on these dynamics generally proves to be on an upward trend.

YATRUS GETS AUDITING

1989 brought new developments. In summer a solo-auditor (MH) came up with the name of Yatrus for the first time ever. This was during a routine Excalibur grooving-in session. She felt connected through her abdomen (!) to some mighty power source in the area of Betelgeuse controlling her by means of a "theta string". We identified the source, got the name of "Yatrus", handled him to what seemed a disconnection and dismissed the whole thing as routine.

We didn't know then that auditing Yatrus is like trying to lift water with your open palms. With Xenu it's like running against a solid wall, with Yatrus it's different. An excellent description of his character is given by Ruth Minshull when she describes

“covert hostility” in her book on emotions⁷⁴. Pretends to comply but doesn’t, cringes, “all my fault, so sorry”, does it again, wheedles his way back into your trust, betrays you again, and so on. That’s Yatrus.

He kept on bothering HM. She couldn’t handle him solo; and every time I went in session with HM to support her, Yatrus didn’t show up. Again a live battle, like in the prime days of Excalibur. We weren’t dealing with entities of old but with a clever and flexible adversary, a real thetan. It was ever so frustrating - no target!

We didn’t realize, then, that HM’s Genetic Entity was the affected part and that we had gone beyond the scope of Excalibur proper (which deals with monitoring entities, strictly speaking). The next mentioning of Yatrus was in TJ’s letter (already mentioned before) of October 1989. Then, from this October on - as if a plug had been pulled - data about Yatrus, Atlantis and the Council of the Twelve bubbled up and gushed forth from all over the place. This went on for years and continues actually up to the present. (The whole of this research was done by “Postulate Auditing”, a method described in my previous book “Scientology - A Handbook for Use”.)

New auditors came along who weren’t very interested in Xenu, Inc.2, BTs and Monitors; they did away with that in a dozen hours or so (instead of, during the heydays of Excalibur, a few hundred!) and then bumped straight into Yatrus - usually because they, attempting to handle some body trouble, found themselves auditing on the track of the GE and sooner or later got a direct line to the Great Perverter of Life Force. Some auditees contacted him even within the first ten hours of auditing they ever had. Most found his name without prior instructions; they pronounced it variously as Yatrus, Heliatros, Iatrox, Yahu or Haoo.

Yatrus, like Xenu, received more auditing than he ever asked for. In particular TJ, HJ, BW and TC deserve thanks for helping to open the GE bank, discovering Yatrus’ lambda scenarios and getting him cornered personally. The final blow fell on 2 October 1992, when Yatrus’ games postulate was found and canceled. (Once it’s exposed it can’t be kept up any more as exposing it breaks the identification thetans have with it on the 8th dynamic.) He didn’t appear ever since. The effects he caused on GEs can be audited out very easily now; individual GEs as well as the GE Pool have become very approachable. To begin with GEs were extremely wary of being talked to by thetans (“never trust a thetan”), now they appreciate the attention and generally desire auditing.

“Suppressive GEs” have not been found yet - but GEs suppressed by thetans, plenty. Much as GEs control thetans through restimulated engrams, no evil intention from the GE is involved. Much rather the dramatization is a form of communication. All they have in mind is survival for the body - even in the inverted sense of cancer. The more growth the better, “see how far you can go with it”. (Yatrus’ old games postulate again!)

THE GE POOL

After 1990, difficulties and problems involving the GE increasingly became the subject of sessions. Auditees and solo-auditors were working on the 5th dynamic, on lambda, life itself! Xenu's game, i.e. controlling mankind as a whole and groups within mankind, occurs on the 4th and 3rd dynamic. Yatrus' game, controlling life, takes place on the 5th and on the 2nd - because the GE not only runs the body but plays the key role in one's sexual life. Suddenly auditors came up with incidents of wild sexual perversions and atrocities, none of this recorded on their own track but on that of the GE and the GE Pool. At certain points in his auditing the auditor would be "put through" from his personal GE to the senior data banks of the GE Pool.

To meditation practitioners it is perhaps of interest that the GE Pool can be approached through the 7th chakra (on top of one's skull). Being experienced in kundalini meditation I once experimented with the chakras, draining each of its charge and taking them to a "floating needle" on the E-meter. Immediately after obtaining this result on the 7th chakra a "two-way valve" opened and life force streamed down on me from the unending reservoirs of the GE Pool, the life force of my own GE simultaneously flowing up into those reservoirs. A prana exchange process.

In contrast to my pre-scientology experiences with this I didn't feel blissfully overwhelmed and in a state of heavenly rapture but instead perceived how contaminated the Pool actually was, what useless, incoherent and contra-survival incidents and postulates came washing down on me, and so I extended the process to auditing the Pool to a floating needle, too (i.e. as much as was available to me at the time). This procedure, if done by enough people, would have vast and beneficial consequences, needless to say. It may be assumed that precisely this was done by meditation practitioners through the millennia. They put themselves there as "prana purification devices", not for their own benefit only but for a supra-personal purpose, too. By helping themselves they helped others, same as in auditing.

The GE Pool contains the totality of all GE energy and information pertaining to the history of this planet and its life forms. Held in place by the Screen it forms its inner lining (and so compares to Bardon's "Earth belt" and Sheldrake's global morphogenetic field). Whatever unusual death or illness occurs anywhere, to any species, is relayed up there, gets immediately "copied and distributed" and then "rains down" on the GEs animating bodies of that particular species.

However, the GE Pool isn't merely a local affair, that is, restricted to this planet alone. As the theta quanta composing it are much older than a mere 75 million years (the age of the Screen), data on the GE "as such" are available as well, on its formative and developmental stages, and it is from this source that most of the revelations concerning Yatrus' Lambda Scenario were taken. Incidentally, one may contact people through a GE-based communication line. It goes own GE to GE Pool to other person's GE. We are all connected through our GEs as long as we have bodies; a heritage from the Middle Implant. One may conveniently use this to one's advantage, like in voodoo where this is commonplace.

How the actual Screen functions was put together from reports of solo-auditors and auditees recalling their between-lives time or their arrival on this planet from elsewhere in the cosmos. It was found that the GE Pool plays a decisive role in stamping sexual patterns on the GE the thetan passing through the Screen is getting teamed up with. One possible pattern is homosexuality. The previous life of the thetan plays a large role here, because after all the Screen does nothing but warming up old karma.

“GERD”

During all of this activity, an auditing process took shape for guiding one through the various complexities one encountered when auditing the GE. It was simply named “GE-Rundown” or “GERD” for short. (“Rundown” is scientologese for any auditing process containing a number of steps which are “run down” from first to last.)

The GERD results in a separation of GE and thetan in the sense that they both take care of their specific part in running life. They become team mates, good partners. The thetan plays his games for which he needs a body, the GE looks after the body in terms of energy supply and coordination and thereby assists the thetan. The thetan in turn does his best to support the GE by taking care of the body (food, drink, exercises, healthy environmental conditions) and does the occasional auditing session when the GE feels too restimulated to be able to cope with it herself.

More usually, though, the GE will be able to handle its own restimulations; part of the end phenomenon of the GERD is that the GE learns to “solo-audit” in a fashion. She doesn’t let engrams come up as long as she can help it. Quite a range of somatics, some of them chronic, can be handled by the GE alone, simply by the thetan asking her: “Can you fix this?” and she’d say: “Yes, boss”, and go ahead and do it with no more than some steady and supportive attention from the thetan on the body part in question. (One may have to study the anatomical and physiological aspects of symptoms, though, and get a clear idea of the processes involved, before positive results can be seen to set in. As one is, in auditing the GE, addressing functions and the coordination of functions one is well advised to primarily study the bodily structures these functions pertain to. Only then can one expect to communicate with the GE with the necessary reality on its “working environment” and turn misfunctions back into proper functions.)

On the basis of this partnership the thetan can be routinely exterior to the body, because he knows the GE will look after it whilst the GE can be assured that the thetan will not dream up some neck breaking “fun” which the GE then would have to repair. Both can rely on each other, to put it briefly. This may result in “para-normal abilities” like withstanding cold air or water comfortably or feeling “added lift” whilst walking. Degrees of this have been observed and could be turned into genuine “siddhis” with further practice.

Here we have a Clear on two further dynamics, the 5th and the 2nd. This expanded Clear probably corresponds to the “Theta Clear” postulated by Hubbard in 1952.

THE PHI MATRIX

Research is an ongoing side activity as people who have reached a certain end phenomenon get used to that level of perception and awareness and, led on by their interest and curiosity, reach up to higher dynamics. In 1993 two solo-auditors independently from each other contacted the mest universe “as such” and thereby followed up what had been pioneered by Robertson in 1986 when the first tentative approaches into this field were made.

Contacting the physical universe “from the inside” is a definitely different experience to seeing it “from the outside”, that is, before entering it. This latter impression was reported by a small number of auditors as they recalled “dropping out” of the static state and taking a viewpoint outside the physical universe, then zooming in on it and finally being inside it. From the outside it looks very small and glittery - perhaps like a city way down in a valley as one looks at it from a mountain top at night - but as soon as one enters it, it becomes huge. To begin with one feels in contact with everything up to the farthest corners of it, and equally with past, present and future. It narrows down as one becomes used to one’s viewpoint and one’s game.

The rehabilitation of the initial sensation of all-connectedness was achieved in Robertson’s 1986 research sessions and again in 1993. Making such contact has the effect of breaking loose one’s theta quanta, fixated since eons in mest, and making them stream back on one. At least within the history of scientology, these are the first if only faint attempts to actually lighten up the physical universe in the sense of the original Conversion Program. What Robertson had envisioned in 1986 might become a routine ability to many.

Perhaps one should refer to this vibratory field (probably the “akasha”, in Hindu terms) as the “Phi Matrix”, because it contains all information pertaining to mest from the moment the first theta quantum was created just as the GE Pool contains all data since the creation of the first GE. Although both data reservoirs produce the sensation that one is in contact “with all”, the Phi Matrix (6th dynamic) feels very different from the GE Pool (5th dynamic). The two experiences are quite distinct.

Speaking on a practical level, contact with the Phi Matrix makes one rather sensitive to what Hubbard calls “enturbulated mest” or “enmest”. Smashed-up car fronts or walls torn down by bulldozers literally feel upset! The theta quanta composing them were arranged to remain in a certain way and dutifully were it for a while, and then suddenly, without any warning, their togetherness was violently disrupted. Likewise, a new building “aches” because all the new bits put together from many sources in a short time, haven’t got used to each other yet. This is why it takes a few years for a building to settle down and become one whole.

I was told that in the old days a stone mason would build a wall by placing the stones in the way they had been together in the mountain side before they were broken.

He felt the energy lines in his hands. So apparently, “listening to mest” is quite a natural ability to some people.

Another practical result is that one may reach any person anywhere telepathically as long as one has an object or a photo of that person. The Indios of the South American Andes know full well why they don't like their photos taken by tourists - they fear for their souls! So do other “non-civilized” races. In Chinese, taking photos is called “she yang” (taking one's shadow), and in the last century when Earth was charted by the whites, it was near-impossible to take photos of Chinese peasants. Purposefully using the 6th dynamic as a means of communication by “loading it” with one's intention - has quite a tradition; not only the old lay lines in Britain still speak of it, the Huns had a similar system, too. By its help one could “telephone” from stone to stone over hundreds of kilometers. And some “holy places” like the famous spiral inside Chartres may originally have served as navigation points for space ships, the same goes for the energy “grids” Bruce Cathie detected around the planet ¹⁸.

The Phi Matrix is a fairly unexplored phenomenon as yet, but on the basis of the few sessions so far it can be said that the physical body as such can be audited, i.e. the actual flesh, bones, hair and teeth part of it. The GE, mind you, is not the body, it only runs it. The actual mass of the body is part of the 6th dynamic. It's dead matter made to come alive by the GE. But not so dead that it couldn't be audited, because after all, even inorganic matter is composed of theta quanta. It seems that the GE comes to its limits when the physical body doesn't play along and that this is yet another area of tension, one floor down from the GE/thetan interaction.

No definite results have been had yet, but as an end phenomenon of Phi Processing one would expect to have a Clear on the 6th dynamic - someone stably exterior to the physical universe who doesn't get affected by the postulates and masses contained in it and who has, on further practice, the ability to create illusions or even actual mest objects. This would correspond to the “Cleared Theta Clear”, again postulated by Hubbard in the early 50's.

DEPROGRAMMING EARTH'S SCREEN

Parallel to the mainstream of research that started with Excalibur and currently extends to the 6th dynamic, an extremely important side activity took place between June and November 92, when BW contacted and analyzed the Screen. Due to his efforts, the Screen became known for what it is. Only *after* BW had managed to “de-program” the Screen did “first-timers” appear, missionaries and “tourists” who had transversed the Screen on their way to Earth and could debrief in detail on its content.

BW found the Screen to agree in principle with Hubbard's description of it being a “standing wave”. It is a layer or perhaps a grid of standing waves containing a high proportion of scalar waves and vibrating at around 2 Gigahertz (between 1.6 and 2.2). It seems to consist of plasma spirals working in opposing directions, thus giving stability to the construction. There are about 49 grid-crossings per square meter, making the

whole thing look like a honeycomb. Each cell has six sides and is some 300 m meters deep. (So that's how thick the whole Screen is.) The cells contain a copying mechanism and a device for follow-up programming whenever needed.

As a whole, the Screen consists of a large number of entities resonating at a frequency sympathetic to a thetan, so he would consider this is a familiar structure and not notice it - like one were getting into a bath tub with its water at exact body temperature. Anytime a thetan contacts one of the honeycomb cells, the cell empties its energy-embedded content on him, whereupon the surrounding cells immediately feed energy to the depleted place and smooth out the irregularity.

The thetan, on contacting the Screen, will identify with whatever it evokes in him and become forgetful of his own past. There is something "eternal" about the whole event, a "never-changingness" as it were.

A further purpose of the Screen is the coupling of a thetan with a GE. Inside the Screen, as its lining and facing the surface of Earth, one find the GE Pool for this planet. As a thetan approaches the Screen the GEs wake up and attach themselves to him through a resonance process triggered by the thetan himself.

The Screen was put there by 78 production robots just before Inc.2. The project was kept an extreme secret; the PR-line fed to Earth population said that a detection and defense shield was being installed around Earth.

The destruction of the Screen was initiated by feeding a counter program through one particular point. As the Screen structure is equipped with an instant copying and distributing mechanism, a computer virus seemed to be the way to destroy it. (BW is a computer expert.) The plan was to put attention on one of the honeycomb cells, thereby trigger it into action and, by taking advantage of the usual Screen mechanism, drain the surrounding cells of their energy content. Draining them was achieved by simply spotting and acknowledging the information of the cells neighboring the one addressed when they sprang into action, thereby temporarily exhausting them.

It had already been found by BW that a small time lag occurred before the "automatic repair and refill programs" of the cells next to the emptied ones would cut in. This time lag was used for counter-programming the Screen.

The first step, as we saw, was emptying a central cell and its surrounding ones of their content; the second step was charging the central cell with standard Excalibur-type anti-Xenu information, like: "Xenu's game is over. The Two Rights of a Thetan are about to be re-established. You all (addressing the theta quanta making up the Screen) have the right to your self-determinism and to leave this game. You may return to your creator and dissolve into nothingness or be free to do whatever you like. You have played this game very well but you don't have to be the Screen any longer." Simultaneously a wave impulse was started in the central cell towards all of the six cell walls and the neighboring cells, diffusing the information evenly to all sides. Thus the copy mechanism was set off in an *outward* motion, away from the central cell, and began to spread the anti-Xenu instructions all across the Screen. Of course this took

several repetitions and a lot of unwavering intention, but it seemed to work. The counter-program began to run by itself, permeating the Screen with anti-Xenu information.

The final check-up on this was done in November 1992 and the erasure process found to be running on its own. The deprogramming of the Screen seemed complete. Throughout October a number of auditors reported feeling “pressed down by something gooey like honey” and that it evoked the sort of masses one knew from Excalibur auditing. It turned out that the Screen, as its cells were “dripping out”, released a final restimulative potential which of course was noticeable to those who habitually extended their space up to that region. Although each of these auditors (who were uninformed of BW’s actions) had cleaned off their personal entities on Excalibur, their GE-related restimulation potential was still there of course, therefore this Screen activity affected the Inc.2 pictures recorded in their *GE-banks*.

In January 1993 an auditor (VA) who knew nothing of BW’s operation, called in to tell me that she had encountered two visitors in her last session who asked her when scientology was going to be for export. They were “clothed” in energy bodies only, having left their solid bodies on their space vessel parked somewhere outside the 26.5 km zone. They commented that moving in and out seemed easier than before.

THE “M-SHIP” IN ORBIT

A curious little incident occurred during this action of de-programming the Screen. During the five months of his operation, BW occasionally felt acknowledged by Sector 0 (the Galactic Council), by the Galactic Patrol and Elron himself. This in itself is not sensational. Acknowledgments from Elron (Hubbard in his non-Earth manifestation) have never been a rarity. Auditors who did well and felt themselves closely tuned to the intention line of the “old man”, quite often felt Elron patting their backs or giving them messages with regard to their missions.

To carry on with the “curious little incident”: On 17 October 1992, BW perceived the Galactic Patrol Main Ship very far away, pretty much at the edge of our solar system. He saw it as a huge sphere of more than two hundred kilometers (201,6 km) in diameter, its inside coated with an atmosphere 5.3 km thick containing machinery, work space, offices, housing etc. Towards the center the atmosphere thins out. Rotation of the sphere creates the gravity needed for one to walk about on its inside.

Nothing curious about this, either. A number of people who didn’t know about BW’s activities, perceived the “M-ship” at that time. The curious part of the story is this: months after his observation, in January 1993, BW learned from the papers that in November 1992 the Max Planck Institute in Heidelberg, Germany, had by means of their telescope in Spain photographed “the most distant body in our solar system ever observed”. “1992 QB 1”, as it was called, had originally been discovered by a Hawaiian telescope in August 1992 and was estimated to be moving in an orbit beyond that of Pluto, the furthest planet of our solar system (more than 6 billion km away). It

was considered to be one of the hypothetical “small planets” at the far edge of the solar system and to have a diameter of 100 to 200 km.

So why look through telescopes when you can get your data by telepathy and exteriorization?

FUTURE PROJECTS

We are approaching the end of this chapter. What was done since the early days of Hubbard’s investigations has been said; the “state of the art” as much as I can picture it, has been described. Perhaps to end off we should look at future developments.

For one thing, what has been achieved by some within a few hundred hours of auditing each, can and should be achieved by many. The improvement resulting from this - for the world in general - could be expected to be considerable, because what that handful of auditors mentioned here did, was no more than driving a wedge in- now what would happen if the whole block was made to burst?

Secondly, one may wonder what levels of awareness come next. We already spoke of Clears on the 5th, 2nd and 6th dynamic. In “More than a Cult?” I extrapolated what the results of further clearing on higher dynamics might be and extended these projections to the 7th and 8th dynamic. As four years have passed since that book was written and a lot of experience was gathered in the meantime, a new evaluation of the matter seems possible, correcting some of my earlier views.

As the 7th dynamic is that of theta-as-energy, a Clear on this dynamic would remain unaffected by any flow of attention from anywhere and anyone except by choice. We are not talking about something as gross as pictures or entities, about remnants of the past, no, we are referring to individual theta quanta, to attention units created *now*. Any faintest bit of attention directed towards one from any source should be immediately noticed by one in 3D and stereo.

A thetan, whether he has a physical body-plus-GE or not, habitually carries with him a theta energy body, his personal briefcase as it were, containing ,all the circuits he needs to translate postulates into action. This, in essence, is the thetan’s “analytical mind”¹.

A convenient device, but it brings with it a considerable disadvantage since it makes one recognizable. It is because of the analytical mind - or rather because of thetans habitually and unthinkingly identifying with their analytical mind - that Xenu could attach his pre-fabricated little clusters to them. Had they been fully aware and causative on the 7th dynamic they would have noticed that bit of foreign matter, that flea in their fur, and eliminated it. A Clear on the 7th dynamic should have such perceptiveness and apart from that be able to create, change or uncreate a mind at will. And he wouldn’t worry about someone stealing his mind or holding it or parts of it

captive by electronic means, knowing that he can always create another one any time (and uncreate what was taken wherever it is held).

Further on, on the 8th dynamic, being Clear would mean remaining unaffected by the *postulates* of others. The 8th dynamic is defined as theta-as-thought. Perceiving pure thought, pure thought without even the faintest picture attached to it, is the most subtle of abilities. It would make one able to read another's past and future - not by viewing his energized pictures but by perceiving his will, i.e. his thoughts, postulates and intentions.

The beginning of this mest universe game, of Xenu's game, was marked by thetans exchanging thoughts, by their interacting with each other on the basis of pure postulates, of non-energized concepts. Being identified strongly with their own thoughts - and totally engrossed in their aesthetics - they ceased differentiating between themselves as the sources of thought and their actual products. They "became thought" and thus stepped down from static to beingness. In this stage they were already unaware enough to absorb thoughts of others without noticing - to the point of believing that those foreign thoughts were their own.

This way thought vectors determining subsequent actions, were formed. By having shared the thoughts of others and made them their own, thetans weren't quite the individuals any more that they - based on their own thoughts only - would have been.

A Clear on the 8th dynamic would very much notice the difference between his own thoughts and those of others, and stick to his own. As well he might knowingly and willingly control and change thought vectors by contributing his own thoughts. And, seeing himself as a static rather than a thought-defined beingness, he should have the ability of either deliberately thinking a thought and be a thetan, i.e. a defined beingness, or withdrawing all thought and be static.

It ought to be emphasized, though, that attaining all this is a matter of ethics, not of merely "clocking up" lots of auditing hours. Certainly, auditing some hundreds and perhaps thousands of hours clears one's mind regarding one's basic purposes and the barriers one has put there oneself to keep oneself from attaining them - but once this has been understood one has to act in the real world to actually execute one's goals, purposes and plans and fulfill them optimally. All the auditing in the world doesn't move one up the line if one is tied to the ground by the dead weight of incomplete cycles of action relevant to one's personal mission. (So the Buddhist choice to return and help the others isn't a free choice at all, really; it's a necessity.)

CHAPTER 7

The Future

MARCAB CRUMBLING * A BODY CULTURE *
“THE FRIENDLY PLANET * POLITICS * SCIENCE AND ART *
THE ATLANTEAN LIABILITY

Whether the results and findings reported in this book are important and what their implications for the sanity of man might be, can of course only be estimated in terms of *factual* global changes; and so, as but a few decades have passed since meditation and auditing became mass movements, one can only, at this point, formulate some cautious future predictions and await the test of time to see if they are correct. If it is true that Xenu's and Yatrus' games are over, that the Screen has been dismantled what consequences will this have for the future of this planet?

Did it suffice to expose the great leaders of this game and have them cancel their games postulates in order to make the world change its course? After all, the planet doesn't look exactly promising...

Let's take stock of the situation. On planet Earth Xenu's Marcabian control scenario with its One World intentions interacts with the Yatruscan scenario of medical experimentation and genetic engineering. The Marcabians pin one down through mind, money and energy control, the Yatruscans through medical, food and birth control. No escaping from it.

Fortunately the effect of these scenarios is cushioned by the third force in this game: the teachers, the missionaries, the restorers of a culture worth living in. We spoke of them in earlier chapters the Vedic sages and their successors who came from motherly Yatruscan India to the White Masculine Marcabian West. They softened the hard edges of the R6 bank; in their meditation they and their disciples vaporized whole cloud banks of ridges around the globe for millennia on end. They prepared the stage for Elron and his final showdown with Xenu. Hubbard alone wouldn't have managed, he needed his auditors. And his auditors wouldn't have managed - witness the dramatic events between 1950 and 1967 - if ten thousand years of meditation hadn't already lifted the fog sufficiently for one to actually see and fight the enemy. That Xenu and Yatrus fell was not the merit of Hubbard alone. It was worked at by many for a long, long time. But did it change anything?

MARCAB CRUMBLING

Let us take 1988 as a key date, the year Xenu gave up. To be sure, Xenu's men are still operating today - naturally so, because one wouldn't expect that eliminating the mastermind behind the Marcabian One World Scenario would make the whole project come to a grinding standstill. But luckily Marcabian agents on Earth - and even Illuminati! - know as little about their true descent as anyone else, thanks to the Screen. They are cut off from their top source and if they do get news via a monitor BT then it's only the stereotype "The Great Marcabian Empire Is Winning As Usual". And so those solitary agents continue on their old plans and orders until they find them unworkable - and they become confused.

And indeed, the planet has become tremendously confused since 1988! A huge stability, the artificially created polarity USA/USSR, broke down in 1989 and ever since individual nations and ethnic groups have asserted their self-determinism and their right to leave the One World game by breaking away from political conditions enforced on them during the colonial times of past centuries. And of course the Big Powers incite wars to prevent this - but they aren't successful.

Another huge stability, that of communist China, begins to wobble, too; now that individual wealth is permitted they just love making money, show off with it and bask in the splendor of their newly-acquired R6-deco such as vaudeville women, rock music, American cigarettes, etc. Sorry, Mr. Mao, the world doesn't like marching in the rhythm prescribed by the One Worlders but swings along to the familiar tune of R6.

Perhaps so far the R6 bank itself was the "saving grace" for this planet - in the face of it, nobody got anything done, neither Xenians, Yatruscans, Galactic Patrollers nor anyone else. Now supposing its power were diminishing - what would happen?

Contact a Marcabian ship these days (like on 2 March 1993), and you'll find them turning off as soon as you give them the latest news on Xenu's game; it doesn't even take auditing them any more. (This particular ship had the mission to keep the trouble in Poland, the GUS, Czechoslovakia, Rumania and Bulgaria going by means of telepathically "heating up" whatever monitors were available - of which there are still plenty left!)

Although the Marcabian wave is still washing around the planet, it is being broken by all sorts of unexpected little barriers, by a phenomenon thought long dead - individuality. Pride, a sense of personal value, a recognition of one's racial history, an appreciation of ethnic customs and craftsmanship, that's what individuality ought to mean by rights - quite a different definition from the Marcab-enforced one of "an individual is a social production unit at some stage between body birth and death".

Too many Clusters were broken up since 1967; the dramatization of compulsive togetherness of people, races and nations has lessened. If a disagreement like that voiced by Salman Rushdie in his "Satanic Verses" can challenge mighty ayatollahs to the point of imposing a death sentence, if the power of Islam is demonstrated only by the bombs of a handful of fundamentalist terrorists, if the pope has to worry about people turning their backs to Catholicism, then the weakness of the strong begins to show.

Even Marcab, Marcab that founded its power (regarding Earth) on that of the Roman Empire, established its worldwide rule with Weishaupt's Illuminati in 1776 and presently manifests itself as a World Bank, as the R6-deco banking temples of New York, Frankfurt and Tokyo - even Marcab has become destabilized. Confusion reigns - politically, militarily, financially. Not only on Earth, but on Marcab as well. When you watch the evening news and see armed police clobbering people - well, it could be on Marcab. A civil war goes on there, a population rises up against a police apparatus controlling their very thoughts; their government uses wave generators to quell the mutiny and paralyze people into fear and submission once again. (An auditor's report it was PH - from August 1992.) Marcabians, too, want freedom and a rehabilitation of their Two Rights; all the implanting in the universe can't drive that out of a thetan. And with their leading genius gone there isn't much to hold them in line any longer.

"But look at all the wars around the world - isn't that bloodshed terrible?", one might think. It is. But anyone knowing the scale of emotions will understand that hate and anger are lighter tones than fear, terror and apathy. It's going upwards. Better alive and fighting than already dead. A planet in turmoil is more hope-inspiring than the apathetic silence impressed on it by military threats, electronic surveillance and drugs - the R6-inspired ideal scene.

A BODY CULTURE

Regarding Yatruscan activities (food, medicine, genetics), there doesn't seem to be any perceptible change yet - but after all, their grand master left his game only in 1992. And mind you, his game is trickier than that of Xenu as it's based on personal conviction not force. It is fairly easy to free Marcabians once one has managed to make them see the control mechanisms they are subjected to - but try free a Yatruscan ... Very difficult! because there is nothing holding him except his own conviction of being very right, very innocent and very harmless - and he'll tell this whilst injecting the brain tissue extracted from aborted embryos into the brain of a mentally handicapped person. To "cure" him. All in the name of "pure science", naturally.

Many postulates relevant to this scenario will yet have to be found and canceled before a stable change can be expected to set in.

Earth, by its ancient Atlantean tradition a Yatrus-dominated planet (in fact his favorite bio-lab), was only recently (75 million years ago) touched by Xenu's machinations. One would expect it to return - "naturally" as it were - to its body-centered, fun & sex loving culture of before Inc.2 relatively soon, now that the Screen, Xenu's "icing on the cake", has been cracked.

Then as now one is using and appreciating soft flesh bodies as a mode of experiencing life, and this won't change so soon. 200 years of Marcabian education attempting to make man a robot, proved fruitless. A whole culture, a whole pattern of enjoyment is built around body sensations. Be it in music, painting, sculpture,

architecture, food, drink, sports, sex, the receptor mode is always the body and his senses.

The world is perceived through the senses; the vibrations emanating from art, music or food are ordinarily (that is, in the case of most people) received and absorbed first by the body (phi body), then the GE (lambda body), then the thetan's energy field (theta body, mind), and then only by the awareness of awareness unit called thetan. A step-by-step transmission. Reversely the thetan communicates to the world not by direct thought but by producing the mental energy manifestations called emotions, thus affecting the GE's programmed emotional patterns, thus the body (muscles, nerves, glands, etc.) and thus his environment.

This shows in social perception and interaction, particularly in mating behavior. One perceives a body, assesses its sexual attractiveness, electricity crackles, sparks fly - two GEs in tune with each other; two GEs in full control of "their" thetans. It's a time-honored procedure; marriages are made that way. Allegedly over the top of that, thetans are "in communication with each other". Are they really?

Even a thetan with no reactive banks of his own, routinely operating mentally and in direct telepathic interaction with others would suffer from this. No matter how well advanced he may be - the impulses he has to put into his environment to play his game in the visible world would still be modified by his GE responding to the environment and the degree of structural intactness and dexterity of his body.

Who would, in social interaction, perceive the thetan as such? A rare occurrence, a sign of highly educated awareness.

The body, as long as one cares to use one, is a relay station to be reckoned with. Talking about Earth and its future, one has to bear this in mind.

Small wonder then that no "pure thetan culture" was ever to be found anywhere on this planet. Look at law - they punish bodies lock away bodies, execute bodies; in doubtful cases they have bodies filled up with drugs at the psychiatrist's. And more often than not it's psychiatry deciding a case, by suggesting that the criminal can't be held responsible "for psychiatric reasons". The question isn't any longer "how wrong was the thetan?" but "how right was the bank?" Who would recognize, let alone educate, the thetan who permitted the bank to control him? Psychology certainly doesn't cater for this. To be on the safe side one concentrates on the body and its GE-banks.

It's a body culture. What do people talk most about if not the weather? Now the weather isn't the thetan's business, it's the GE who feels affected by it. A body culture.

Look at pre-Marcabian Celtic Europe, look at the very Yatuscan. Asian cultures, for example at Indian music, Tibetan yogis, Chinese food, Balinese dancing, Japanese prison camps - and what do you see? Sensual enjoyment, perfect GE control, refinement of food, sex and torture beyond any post-Marcabian European imagination. Thetans - who cares?

This was a Yatruscan planet and it still is. Atlantis still lives in the minds of people, in their folklore, their fairy tales, their naive art. Ireland is full of it, Tolkin's "Lord of the Ring" is nothing but it, the King Arthur legend lives off it and so do India's folk tales of Krishna and his milkmaids, of dark, blood dripping Kali, so do the "dreaming" myths of the Australian Aborigines - one could go on and on finding examples.

Earth people have managed to continue an Atlantean tradition despite the 36-day implant of Inc.2, despite the omnipresence of the Screen, despite Marcabian imports like motor cars, atom bombs, electronic surveillance, computer games and hard rock. They had the creative impetus to turn R6 symbology into R6 deco and make it part of their culture. Next time you happen to travel through southern Germany, watch the spires of their Catholic churches and you'll see a gilded cock on top of a cross. They value a fertility symbol (the cock) higher than an R6 emblem! GE senior to thetan, Yatrus senior to Xenu - it shows everywhere. It isn't for nothing that Xenu's very own monks made their lasting fame not through their high spirituality but through fabricating potent spirits such as wine, beer and liquor, very Yatruscan stuff indeed. And right under the eyes of tiara-robed One God representatives you find the peasants sacrificing bulls (Spanish bullfights) to the greater glory of Yatrus, you find them worshipping Virgin Mary - a *woman* ! The One God for the lips, for the head perhaps - but the Celtic White Goddess for the heart. Celtic Easter: a fertility ritual in spring, everybody fornicating everybody else. Christmas, nine months later- the babe that's born at the hour of the winter solstice is to be king of the tribe. Now look at this picture: the Celtic god-king as a child in his crib, a holy woman his mother, ox and ass watching them how more Yatruscan could it get? Neither Xenu nor the Catholic Church managed to change that. And not that they didn't try witness the inquisition, the witch burning, the suppression of femality, of the GE and, as its consequence, our current ulcerous and cancerous Male White Western World.

Religions always followed the Yatruscan path, they never deviated. Look at their religious festivities such as birth, marriage and death - what do they celebrate if not points decisive for the GE, not the thetan? Look at the Far East - what are they cultivating if not harmony between the male and the female; what power do they evoke in their chakra meditation if not that of the GE? Now what about entities, demons, evil spirits, BTs, Clusters and Monitors? Well, they do exist, don't they, but just build up some prana, open your seventh chakra, tune in to the GE Pool, let that exhilarating wave of 5th dynamic ch'i energy flow all over you and those demons will feel mollified, will fall into a deep slumber. As they don't stand a chance against such sweet treatment anyway - why bother auditing them?

Even Freud in the West- what did he announce to the startled Viennese bourgeoisie if not that the power of the GE's life force, a power he termed "Libido", would beat any coolly calculating Marcabian mind with its sex pictures? And Hubbard, didn't he start likewise? It took him a good fifteen years before he switched over from the GE's banks to the thetan's banks with their BTs, Clusters and Monitors. And who wants to know anyway? Hubbard the maniac, Hubbard imposing his case on innocent

people, just look at the New Age guys, how peaceful, why not burn incense and have some Tantra sex, do we really have to audit . . .

Scientology isn't popular on this planet. Too heady. More fun to act sub-umbilically (i.e. below the navel).

Marcabian militarism, money-mindedness and thought-control already weakened, witness the tumbling American colossus stands no chance against this. Earth men love their body pleasure, love following the demands of their GEs, detest too much thinking, hate political control. Samoa for everybody - that's the motto. Pleasant climate, no work, pretty bodies, food grows right into your mouth.

“THE FRIENDLY PLANET”

With the Screen gone, there will a growing influx of missionaries, there will be an intense interchange of news with other galactic cultures (now that one can get out), there will be a growing awareness of the galactic-political context Earth is operating in (and we are, whether we know it or not), there will be diplomatic ties with Sector 0 and sooner or later a decision as to where Earth belongs. A new self-confidence followed by a political confession.

And Earth will be considered “The Friendly Planet” again (travel agent's sales pitch), well thought of and worth visiting, because much of the negative attention tied up here in the form of BTs and Clusters has already been audited out and the rest will gradually leave now that no Screen is in the way. Some of the thetans on the 76 planets whose complete theta fabric was abducted and implanted in the course of Inc.2, may well have re-constituted themselves long ago but would still feel nagged and haunted by pictures emanating from their personal theta bundles held captive on Teegeeack. They will want to learn how to audit and clean up the remaining bits themselves, and they'll be free from these bundles and free from dramatizing their contents.

There is definite interest in seeing auditing technology exported; solo-auditors have been asked more than once when they are going to start working off-planet. So one future role of Earth may be a galactic auditor's training academy - if scientology makes it through the ongoing struggle within its own ranks without being distorted beyond recognition. If.

But supposing it did and were accepted by society; supposing auditing was done in great volume - this could have the interesting side effect of bringing to light quite some amazing data about the history of this planet and its cultures. After all, most witnesses to past epochs are still walking about, and getting them to recall is no difficulty. Foreseeably, text books on history, anthropology and archeology will have to be re-written!

POLITICS

Much as the One World idea was decried in this book, it is in fact the only hope for the survival of this planet - yet *not* as a false solution clandestinely imposed on the people of Earth by extraterrestrial foreigners. What with webs of air traffic lines, computer networks and satellite TV wrapping this planet up with scarcely a bare patch left, a central coordinating body is overdue. Yet establishing it shouldn't be left up to the World Bank alone, to the Rothschilds, Rockefellers and their globe-engirding "humanitarian" foundations.

Historically, this planet always was run by a very few, by chieftains, kings, emperors, popes, industrial monopolists and banking magnates; it was a playground for warring intentions. And the people had to put up the money for these wars; more often than not they paid with their blood. Today, at this time of false democracy, it isn't any different yet. Earth is still run by the wealthy few, not by those who would excel in wisdom, practical skills and ethics, not by those who prove by actual products that they deserve to be leaders. The power is in the hands of the military and the military in the hands of bank consortiums. Any thetan with only half a brain who succeeds in grabbing an embryo in a royal house or a big banker's family, has got it made. That's all he has to do to be in clover, have power in plenty and let his aberrations go rampant without anyone checking him.

What this leads to we have seen for some millennia now and we are quite satisfied that we've seen enough of it. To be efficient - and yield optimum solutions, an Earth Government cannot be manned by hereditary money or hereditary titles, it cannot be manned either by means of media-controlled "democratic" voting procedures nor by charismatic leaders spouting ideology but only by competent, practical, pragmatic people, models of civil behavior. To build up to such moral standards it would take reviving a sense of honor, decency and integrity among *all* citizens of Earth, a rehabilitation of almost forgotten virtues, an honoring of an ability to think, of knowledge ability, willingness to bear responsibility and own up for one's errors, readiness to control one's immediate environment (instead of leaving it up to another). John F. Kennedy called it "civil courage". The anti-authoritarian ways fashionable today, the laissez-faire attitude propagated by certain schools of psychology have amply proved their disastrous consequences and therefore won't serve to build a functioning social unit of the magnitude we are envisioning here.

Whether those Earth Governors themselves ought to be actual "citizens of Earth" is a moot point - because who is, anyway? Most leaders, no matter of what persuasion, came from elsewhere. And what prerequisites would make one an Earth citizen? After how many lifetimes would one be considered "naturalized"? (Perhaps one ought to audit Earth Government officials on a few delicate questions before admitting them to their seats - such as: "What did you do during Inc.2? During Inc.1? What's your relationship with Xenu? With Yatrus? What galactic lobby do you represent?" And so on. Should be interesting.)

There are two significant differences between a One World dictatorship and a pragmatic, aristocratic Earth Government: one, the latter would seek optimum solutions

with reference to the survival of the planet and all life on it (instead of exploiting it and working into its own pocket, like the former has proved to do); two, it would take individuality fully into account instead of suppressing it. The roughly 150 official nations on this planet are artificiality's. Marcabian inventions created since 1492 in the process of carving up the world map; yet the fact of the matter is that one is dealing with hundreds of ethnic units, thousands of regional sub-units and a corresponding amount of languages, dialects customs and life styles. They are individuals and they all have a right to exist as such! Yet the Marcabian solution was rooting them out, "educating" them to extinction or at least suppressing them; the Yatruscan solution was blending them with other races, bereaving them of their distinctive features and rendering them unrecognizable.

This is unwise for more than one reason. First of all, keeping races, languages and customs distinct creates a sense of home and therefore of orientation; it builds strength from the roots of society upwards and thus would contribute to the revival of civil courage - and civil disobedience, too. (Reversely, tribal and family structures are unwanted when the power is supposed to come from the top downwards; therefore they must be diluted or even destroyed.) Secondly, individuality makes for variety and picturesqueness and would assure the planet's attractiveness for future interstellar tourism (what with other planets being homogenous units in terms of race, language, culture and industrial specialization). Lastly, racial and ethnical distinctiveness would facilitate rehabilitation of "lost" thetans and GEs by providing familiar body types.

True enough, in this mobile society there is no way of keeping people from interbreeding - but one doesn't have to enforce this the way Yatruscan scenarios are currently implementing it. If it went by its own pace, it would be just fine.

If it is true that the white race, dramatizing its former ownership of this planet, strives to re-appropriate it, if it is true that the Marcabians used this driving force for their own purposes, and if it's true that the Marcabian gambit has been crossed, then the consequences for the future of the white race will be rather drastic. Lacking extraterrestrial back-up it will stand alone with its "whites only" attitude; finally it will have to come to terms with the fact that other races quite undeniably do exist here and that one can't simply extinguish them by means of mass starvation or spreading diseases (modern equivalents to Nazi gas chambers). Concurrently one would expect those other races to get an up draught through the lessening of the white race's false self-confidence, and to make their claims known - see the recent rise of Japan, China and some smaller Asian countries.

Races, as we know, are a product of Yatrus's bio-lab; after all, back in pre-Atlantean days all bodies were white. And so there might exist, on the side of non-white races, some instinctive consideration that the white man somehow is the better man but even if that was so it has nothing to do with thetans but with bodies only. The fact that *thetans* fall for this is the result of Xenu's predilection for implanting white bearded gods into people's minds, and therefore shouldn't be unduly exploited by those who happen to correspond to that image, to gain advantages.

SCIENCE AND ART

The people of this planet want their basic problems solved - nutrition, shelter, energy supply, medical care, personal safety, education, meaningful jobs. They are sick of being guinea pigs to extra-terrestrial experimentation.

The solutions are all there. They were worked out by scientists and sages already decades ago, even centuries ago. They lie in the drawers of those who won't let them be used. This could be a planet of plenty, of abundance. There is plenty of food, plenty of energy, plenty of money, plenty of medical and educational technology. Scarcity is artificial. Danger of overpopulation is a myth, a misinformation scenario to control people. The problem is not overpopulation but disorganization and bad management on a governmental level.

Along with a turn in science - science as a servant of man instead of the military - would have to go a re-orientation of the arts. At its present stage, art either nostalgically glorifies the past, critically portrays the present (thus adding to the tristesse) or outright worships the R6-bank; neither of that is hope-inspiring with regard to the future. And that, I believe, is the role the artist should play in society; he should be an inspirer of hope, courage and strength, a visionary dreaming up better worlds, worlds that seem both desirable and attainable².

THE ATLANTEAN LIABILITY

The dangers of a Yatruscan bio-lab continuing unchecked on a planetary scale are obvious. I should imagine that no-one would volunteer to have himself turned into a man-lizard chimera, walk about with the brain of his recently deceased neighbor in his own skull, know that he had a chimpanzee for a foster mother during the inter-uterine months of his life or learn that his "mother" was a homosexual wanting to bear a baby and actually did so - yet another miracle of modern medicine, condoned by the European Parliament's approval of homosexual marriages.

None of this is a product of this author's horrid fantasies, not at all, it's already in its experimental stages, it's for real! And agreement with it is certainly not beyond imagination, because after all we *have* already volunteered, on a more commonplace level, to being addicted to alcohol, coffee, cigarettes, household drugs, psychiatric drugs, street drugs, etc.

Small wonder that we did, after all we are dealing with old habits from long before Inc.2. A Yatruscan tradition perhaps - but still against the basic programs of the GE. There is an agreement based on age-old dramatizations that this should be done. It will take a lot of GE auditing, a lot of work in the actual GE Pool to undo the addiction potential that was built up through triennia of mis-programming through drugs, genetic mutation experiments and direct GE-implanting. This is going to be a fairly extensive auditing project.

As a preliminary measure against Yatuscan control scenarios. losing one's fear of death would serve. The bizarre and often inhuman solutions practiced by western medicine to "preserve life under all circumstances" can only be popular as long as people are afraid to die. The decent honorable death of yesteryear, the decorous death in one's own bed, the preparedness to face one's afterlife, have been replaced by shameful, degraded weeks and weeks in a clinic, with the body drugged and attached to machines, the thetan long gone and the GE as unhappy and restimulated as she can possibly be.

There is no harm in dying. The GE is immortal, the thetan is immortal, even the theta quanta the body is composed off, are immortal. So who would mind dying?

For the GE a gentle death with the body all in one piece is perfectly acceptable. Part of the program. And after death there is no danger nowadays, now that the Screen has holes in it, neither for GE nor thetan. You go, you come back. No Screen. Or you say good-bye and go elsewhere. Should you ever wish to come back - no problem. Anytime. There is no shortage of bodies, not on this planet. Put two bodies together and they'll produce a third one; it almost always works, thanks to Yatus.

So give death a chance, give the clinic a miss, and the experimentation boys will have less of a market.

Life on this planet could be easy if we only reminded ourselves of the Nature of Things, of the basic programs inherent in the phi- and lambda-worlds, and live with them instead of against them.

Politically, with Xenu gone and Marcab dispersed and confused, the next twenty years will see us through the worst, but in terms of de-aberrating a body-oriented culture and elevating it to its former Atlantean heights *without* any aberratedness, elevating it to the ideals of the Vedas, we are talking about a few more years. Perhaps two thousand? Not really a lot, considering.

Four quadrillion years of implanting ought to have taught anyone a lesson, one would hope, and perhaps make it agreeable to clean up at long last, each taking care of their own bits.

The phase of Making The Game is over, and with the Games Makers gone, we are entering a new phase - that of Un-making the Game.

Epilogue

One of the dangers connected with writing books is that people may start believing what one says.

Anything written may lead to quoting the author, and that to agreeing with him - and agreeing with him to underestimating one's own experiences.

Out of this, superstition is born, after the tune: "Not what I say is true, but what *he* says". Because he is bigger, better, holier or cleverer than me. So he must be right.

Why? Because he wrote a book. But that's all he did, after all, didn't he? And perhaps that's the only difference between you and him, really. He splattered his viewpoint all over the place, you didn't. So what?

Nothing in this book is true "for everybody". It's the truth some people found for themselves at a specific time. As there are common denominators between what they found, one is inclined to take this as "*the* truth". Fair enough - but perhaps one ought to call it, more cautiously, a "passing agreement on what was and what is". A possibility.

Example: Was there a World War II? "Yes", you might say. Well, how do you know? Did you actually experience it? And if you did, how do you know others had comparable experiences elsewhere? "But they told me!", is the answer. "And it's documented in films, photographs and many books." So? All you are saying is that you are in agreement with a certain source of information. What is true about World War II is what you agree is true. It's a truth you have arrived at by selecting information according to logic, plausibility and within a mental framework you feel comfortable with.

Perhaps everything in this book is an invention, an example of how the combined madness of a number of people as inspired by their chief madman, L. Ron Hubbard, can result in a few hundred printed pages. Perhaps you were introduced to an artificially created universe that's continued to be created by Hubbard's followers.

But why would they do such a thing?

Wallowing in the mysteries of the whole track, elevating Xenu to a mythological being is no solution to anything, except perhaps that it serves to balance out one's inferiority complex (because now one knows a "secret").

There is only one yardstick to judge auditing by: does it make a person more able to enhance the survival of himself and his fellow men and women? If not, it's pure theta cosmetics to smooth out the wrinkles in one's halo; it's a mind trip, something to get high on, a substitute for living life and exposing oneself to the judgment society brings down on one.

Whatever is said here about Xenu, Yaturus and the developmental stages of the universe might be conveniently used by someone to “explain” why he cannot cope in life, as a good reason to be inefficient, a victim, a pain in the neck.

So let it be said loud and clear: nothing in this book is “important” .

What is important is expanding one’s own happiness and well being and at the same time that of one’s fellows, it’s creating effects that can be tolerated by others with oneself being able to tolerate any effect, it’s finding solutions that do not backfire and therefore won’t ever nail one down to one’s past.

Some solo-auditor may have a swollen chest because he just knocked a handful of Marcabians off their ship; his next door neighbor, in the same time span, may have been tending the cabbages in his garden.

Who is “righter”? Who is more ethical? Perhaps this gardener didn’t need to do any solo-auditing, because he never made the sort of mistakes this auditor made and so doesn’t have to clean anything up. Perhaps he is a gardening missionary with particular attention to cabbages, straight from the M-ship, and has no Earth case yet that would need straightening out. Perhaps he is an enlightened being from outside the physical universe who only arrived two weeks ago with the intention of setting an example of simplicity and serenity and “borrowed” that gardener’s body. Who is to know?

Everything in this book is true with relation to the frame of mind of the people who found these data. And it’s true for anyone who can relate to that frame of mind. So it’s relatively true.

For anyone else, it’s nonsense.

If this book contained any absolute truth and the reader were able to see it as it is, the world (including this book) would crumble away around him and dissolve into nothingness.

APPENDIX

A. Glossary

(Words printed in *italics* within a given definition are part of this glossary and defined at their proper alphabetical place.)

Aberrated, aberration. Non-optimum, irrational behavior based on compulsions, repression's and fears; behavior not conducive to optimum survival. Taken from Latin, "aberrated" means literally "having wandered off the path".

Anchor points. (See *theta quanta*.) **Attention units.** (See *theta quanta*.) **Auditee.** The person who is audited by an *auditor*: In Scientology jargon usually "pre-clear" or "pc".

Auditing. The activity of making someone face the traumatic incidents of his past so as to bring about a higher level of causativeness, ability and joy.

Auditor. A "listener" (literally). He aids the *auditee* in focusing his attention on traumatic incidents.

Awareness of awareness unit. Hubbard defines the *thetan* as an awareness of awareness unit who creates his thoughts, emotions and mental space and is aware not only of these but as well of the *thoughts, emotions* and *mental pictures* streaming in on him from the environment and of his responses to those. He is "aware of being aware". If one could have and hold this position of awareness one would remain just as unaffected by thoughts and emotions as a mountain top by rain clouds. This state of causing motion without moving oneself is the essence of *static-ness*.

Basic. The earliest incident on a chain of traumatic incidents, holding all later ones in place and being the cause for aberrated behavior and psychosomatic complaints.

Charge. Negative emotions such as grief, fear, anger, hate and rage are signs of charge. Charge is an inner tension, its source being the friction between a *games postulate* and its counter-postulates.

Clear. A person who can control certain areas or categories of mental *mest* or at least can distinguish between himself and the mental phenomena attempting to "blind" him; someone who doesn't identify with mental phenomena not created by himself. The state of Clear and its corresponding abilities evolve on an expanding scale, depending on one's inherent abilities and the amount of *auditing* and general education a person has had.

Cognition. A fundamental realization about one's life, usually going along with a change for the better. Cognition's often refer to those basic *postulates* and attitudes one unknowingly identified with.

Dianetics. Literally translated, this means "through the mind". L. Ron Hubbard's original method of dealing with psychosomatic interaction as contained in the book "Dianetics, Modern Science of Mental Health", published 1950. In 1954, Dianetics came to be comprised within the much broader philosophical structure of *Scientology*. (See there for further data on dianetics.) **Dimension points.** (See *theta quanta*.)

Dramatization. Compulsively and unknowingly "playing" the role of one of the people involved in a traumatic incident one has suffered oneself or has telepathically come in contact with.

Dynamics. The game “below *static*” is conveniently structured as eight dynamics, thus subdividing life into eight playing fields of increasing magnitude and responsibility (counting upwards from dynamic one). They are: first, one’s private self; second, sex, family, children; third, the group; fourth, mankind; fifth, organic life including one’s body; sixth, inorganic matter and energy, the physical universe; seventh, spiritual activities based on mental energy (*theta, lambda*); eighth, pure thought activity with no energy attached.

Engrams. Recordings of moments of physical pain of life-threatening magnitude. Such incidents are “video-filmed” and complete with all perceptions, stored in the memory banks of the *Genetic Entity*. Engrams are the single source of psychosomatic ills. The information contained in them will when restimulated and dramatized, distort the internal co-ordination of the body’s energy flows and subsequently its neural and endocrine systems.

Emotions. Vibrations produced by *thetan* and *Genetic Entity* and emanating from their combined mental energy fields. (“Emotion”, Latin, means “a motion emanating”.) Emotions have frequency and amplitude. The lower the frequency, the lower is the emotion; the lower the amplitude, the weaker is their volume of expression. Emotions are not simply passing moods but basic and fairly persistent attitudes towards life. They function as filters for one’s perceptions (inflow) and actions (outflow).

Entity. A *ridge* not made by oneself but by another person during some heavy incident. It’s another person’s ridge that wandered over to one, getting from the other fellow’s space into one’s own. Entities have “demonic qualities” insofar they may produce apparitions at night, speak to one like “inner voices” or make pictures fall off walls.

Game. Consists of goals, freedoms and barriers.

Genetic Entity or GE. The bio-energy field surrounding and penetrating the body. It feeds life energy (*lambda*) to the body and contains basic programs for growth, maintenance and procreation. The term “genetic” doesn’t refer to genes but (based on a Latin word) to the act of “bringing forth”. The Genetic Entity is really a “life generating entity”. The GE responds to the *thetan* by emotional resonance (affinity) and vice versa. Although created by thetans long ago, it has been granted a life of its own and within the framework of its programs operates independently from the thetan in the field of body control, using the same mode of operation as the thetan, namely postulates and theta quanta. Thus it can create *ridges* (*engrams*). The GE’s survival programs are counter-acted by the contra-survival data contained in engrams. The GE is not an individual like the thetan but a temporal emanation from a general “GE Pool” whence it comes at the moment of fertilization and where it returns after body death.

Goals Problems Mass or GPM. Unknowingly putting attention on goal and counter-goal leads to a problem which eventually results in a mass (and ultimately in psychosomatic illness).

Havingness. The ability to have everything as well as nothing without ducking, evading, attacking, ignoring or any other mechanism. One would take it as it comes without losing one’s good humor and serenity and sense of well being. Havingness at its best is expressed as unconditional love.

Implanting. Just as one can implant foreign tissue into an organism, one can - by using the combination of pain, drugs, hypnosis and perhaps electronic means - implant an idea into the *mind* of a person. It means overwhelming the self-determinedness of a person and robotizing him. Implants degrade *thetans* to such a state of victimization that they

see their only survival chance in identifying with the implanter and “becoming him”. They will now do to others as he did to them.

Lambda. The life-generating energy used by the *Genetic Entity*. Although both *thetan* and GE basically operate on the basis of *theta quanta*, it is convenient to distinguish between the categories *theta*, *lambda* and *phi*.

Mental image picture. They aren't only a visual impression of past incidents but as well contain any other mode of sense perception. These may be played off separately, for example only the smell, only the body pains, etc. (See as well *ridge*.)

Mest. Acronym composed of the first letters of the four words “matter”, “energy”, “space” and “time”. Although all mest is essentially a residue of the creative activity of *thetans*, one conveniently distinguishes between mental and physical mest.

Mind. The platform wherefrom the *thetan* (as *static*) acts. The mind is his “briefcase”, his “electronic notebook”, consisting of the *postulates* he keeps continuously energized so as to put a number of activities on automatic. That part of the mind he creates consciously is termed “analytical mind”, that part he is not aware of (because he doesn't like to) but still reacts to, is the “reactive mind” (synonym: reactive bank). Most usually the *thetan* doesn't identify with his static aspect but with this mental energy field called mind.

Phi. The residues of past *theta* creations (made of *theta Quanta*), solidified to the density of the physical universe.

Postulate. A thought containing an intention to be, do or have. A postulate in itself is not energy; the reverse is true: because of a postulate, energy is created in the first place. Postulates are senior to *mest*. There are (positive) games postulates and (negative) counter-postulates. The friction between the two generates *charge* (*GPM*).

Reactive bank, reactive mind. (See *mind*.)

Restimulation. The evoking of buried memories through elements in the environment similar to those in a past incident. The restimulation mechanism, to be exact, is not set in motion by the outside influence itself but by the *thetan's* putting attention on his games *postulates* or counter-postulates. (Usually because he has failed to differentiate, has chosen to take the similarity as an identity.)

Ridge. A mass of mental energy containing all data of an incident, when it was formed, who was there, how it happened. A ridge contains action, *emotions* and *postulates*.

Scientology. Literally translated this means “study of wisdom”. A therapy and self-realization method based on the philosophical principles laid out by L. Ron Hubbard and their application in *auditing*. One part of scientology is *dianetics* (literally “through the mind”) where psychosomatic ills are remedied through addressing the *thetan* and aiding him to take responsibility for the condition of his body and *GE*. This is achieved by reviewing traumatic incidents in the *auditee's* or another's past in order to alleviate the *charge*. In contrast to dianetics, scientology concerns itself with improving spiritual awareness and developing corresponding abilities. (This is why it is categorized as a religion by some.) Scientology is applied in various ways by different groups or sects world wide, some being entirely practical, others fairly ideological. The Church of Scientology is the largest of these sects and actively suppresses the others by legal means (on the issues of copyrights and trademark violations) and personal harassment. (For the history and philosophy of scientology, see “Scientology - More than a Cult?”; for the actual procedures, see “Scientology - A Handbook for Use”, both by L. Kin.)

Static. The all-causative aspect of the *thetan*, the originator of *thought*, *emotion* and action. Much as the thetan tends to identify with thought, emotion and action, he in fact never ceases to be static. (See *awareness of awareness unit*.)

Theta. “Thought power”. Theta appears as pure non-energized *thought* and, in energized form, as mental *mest*. It’s the building block for being, doing and having (see *theta quanta*).

Thetan. The “thought being”, i.e. the agent causing *thought* and operating by thought as well as mental *mest*, its derivative. On one level of experience (8th dynamic) a thetan may be defined as “the sum of his postulates and counter-postulates”, on a lower level of experience (7th dynamic) as “the sum of his theta quanta habitually fixated in time and space”. Depending on his degree of identification or non-identification, a thetan may appear *static*, a “thought being” or a “mental mest being”; he may even “become” his *Genetic Entity*.

Theta quanta. Minute quantities of *theta*, produced by the *thetan* whenever he uses energy in his operations. Depending on their use, theta quanta may be called “attention units” (produced anytime one concentrates), “dimension points” (to create and demarcate space), or “anchor points” (to hold the thetan habitually within a certain space). Theta quanta add up to mental *mest* and, if sufficiently condensed, to physical *mest*.

Time track. The consecutive record of *thoughts*, *emotions* and efforts since the beginning of time. A thetan has the potential to recall anything that’s of relevance to him. The time track is a mental creation which exists only as long as the thetan wishes to look at it.

Thought. (See *postulate*.)

Universe. The totality of everything a *thetan* ever created, no matter if he considers it important or unimportant, knows it or has decided to forget it, is willing to face it or not. There are three universes: firstly one’s own, a closed system, secondly that of another, again a closed system, and thirdly that where the two (or more) overlap or interface. The first and second universe are only real from the viewpoint of their respective creators; the third universe is considered “common reality”. The degree or magnitude of the interface depends on communication and affinity.

Valence. (From “valens”, Latin, meaning “force”.) A person in a traumatic incident whose role one may *dramatize* long after the incident is over. Because of the precision and completeness of data in the recording of an incident one is able to create for oneself a “force field” sufficiently similar to that person’s so that one becomes that person to a degree for as long as the *restimulation* may last. One “goes into his valence”. In its extreme form this may be studied by observing the behavior of patients in psychiatric wards. (If one does it voluntarily and intentionally enough, e.g. during magic rituals, one can actually contact and draw power from the thetan/GE unit concerned.)

B. Reader's Restimulation Remedy

INCIDENT 2

When you, whilst reading this text, feel restimulated and get pictures streaming in on you and feel your body going massy, it isn't actually you personally who is restimulated but your BTs. You most likely weren't there when it happened, but *they* were. When taking walks, doing practical work or "sleeping it off" doesn't help to make you feel better, you must audit them. (This works without an E-meter, too.)

However, do take vitamin C, E, B1 calcium and magnesium in large dosis. This serves to fortify the body's energy field and keeps the energy impulses produced by "awakened" entities from affecting the Genetic Entity (which would result in sleeplessness and nervousness) ^{75, 76}

To audit, go back in the text to the sequence steps of Inc.2. Starting with the Capture, go through steps 1 to 6, adding "Go to . . ." to each step. ("Go to the Capture!")

This turns the step into an auditing command and forces the restimulated BTs through the incident. It reduces their charge and makes them disappear (blow).

In all this you must keep a narrow enough beam of attention so you're dealing with one at a time. Sometimes you won't get individual BTs but whole clusters of them. Clusters don't respond as well as BTs because they are many but believe they are one, because they are stuck in the same incident. You can simply ask: "Is this a BT or a Cluster?" and the reaction will tell you. You will find out that they have "leaders". Address your commands to the leader or "cluster chief" and go through the sequence steps as described. The Cluster will fall apart when you get to the step when it was formed. It may be any of the steps 1 to 6.

This is the process:

1. Locate the source of the pictures or masses you are experiencing. Point to it with your finger. Estimate the distance to it as correctly as you can.

The source is of course a BT or Cluster. With a bit of experience you will feel magnetically drawn towards them.

2. Direct the commands of steps 1 to 6 to them, with good intention. Some people do this silently, others murmur or even speak loudly; this supports their intention. Intend each BT or Cluster through steps 1 to 6. (Do not use any of the later steps!) Do this repeatedly on the same BT or Cluster until you get no more pictures.

3. The BT may “blow” (disappear) at this point. You can quite distinctly feel a blow by the sudden absence of what your attention was directed to. Instead of a somethingness there is now a nothingness. Acknowledge it and find the next BT. (Step 1 of this Remedy.)

In case of a Cluster it will break up into many BTs as soon as you have come to the point in the Inc.2 sequence when it was formed.

Handle each BT of that Cluster individually, as described.

4. If the Inc.2 pictures weaken but the BT doesn't go, repeat taking it through steps 1-6. If it still doesn't go, it needs to be taken earlier on the time track. Charge depends on the basic incident on a chain of incidents, and the basic incident is always the earliest one.
Give the command: “Go to Incident One!”

If don't know yet what Incident One is, with any good luck the BT may know. So it's worth trying this command to see what happens, without first reading the chapter where Inc. 1 is explained.

When your command produces no result, you will have to study the chapter on it before continuing the auditing of your BT. BTs are in such a state of shock and unconsciousness that they cannot easily recall. That's why the auditor has to *intend* them through their incidents. As soon as you know the sequence of Incident 1, you can do this. Just follow the instructions given in the “Auditing Notes” below.

5. General rule: Run Incident 2 repeatedly on the BT found until its charge is reduced.
If the BT doesn't blow, run Incident 1 and earlier similar incidents till you get the basic for that BT. Then it will blow.

Always be nice to them. Have a friendly and interested attitude. Being nasty to them because they seem to be nasty to you doesn't help a bit. It makes the ridge even bigger!

They are in a worse position than you are. After all, you are the one helping them to become free, and not the other way round. By helping them you are helping yourself.

Good luck!

INCIDENT 1

Auditing Note 1: By adding “Go to . . . !” to the sequence steps of Inc.1 (beginning of chapter 2.2, second quotation) you can take a BT through Inc.1 (similar to what you did on Inc.2).

In particular you must direct the BT's attention to the snaps and have it find out what happened during them. This way it will disconnect from the "prefabs" (prefabricated lumps of theta quanta) and be free. It will eventually be "only itself" and consist of only one brand of theta quanta - those of the original creator. At this point it usually disconnects from you and blows. All the different bits peeled off it will return to their original creators by themselves. (You can intend them to do this as a final clean up.)

Auditing Note 2: When your BT does not blow after running it through Inc.1 a few times, it obviously isn't quite free to go yet. There are foreign theta quanta and the intentions tied up in them, holding it.

Check for "earlier similar incidents?" or "pre-1 incidents?" .

Ask either of these questions repeatedly. Even though you may not get any pictures (too subtle), the BT will be led down a chain of incidents to the first one and blow.

Auditing Note 3: If your BT did not blow after running the pre-I chain, he is for sure stuck in a recruitment incident. Just ask for it. "How did you ever come to agree with Xenu?" "When did you first decide to play his game?" He will tell you.

Make sure you have him find the exact moment when he went for Xenu's precious glittery theta quanta, get his contact with the *first* one of them, get him to spot the admiration he had for Xenu and the postulate he made then. This will free him. (You aren't auditing a BT any more, actually. You are now in contact with the thetan "behind" the BT. Whereas the BT was just a dot in space, the thetan feels *big*.)

Auditing Note 4: After running your BT through its recruitment incident, you have attained the result that no further foreign theta quanta are attached to it, neither of Xenu nor of others. It is basically itself, meaning that it consists only of one brand of theta quanta - those of the original creator. It may blow now.

But if it is an unhappy BT, it won't blow. Should its creator have had a loss or failure in an earlier game or an earlier universe, his theta quanta will bear the marks of this and you'll have to audit it.

To remind you: all theta quanta contain an imprint of the emotion and the postulate at the moment of their creation. When you get both and duplicate it exactly, energized theta will vanish and transform itself into static theta. This mechanism makes auditing possible.

Ask: "Failure in an earlier universe?" Get all data and the exact failure including the postulate made then. Continue with: "Earlier similar failure?"

When this doesn't cause any further response, the aspect of failure has lost interest. Time to look at positive aspects. Give the command: "Go to an earlier universe where you were happy" or "fully causative" or "successfully did your own thing". Get the data and repeat the command if no joyfulness occurs, taking him even earlier.

This is an orientation step to happier times and gives the BT (and its creator) an idea what sort of game he could go back to. It rehabilitates causativeness.

Note that this chain of “earlier universes?” may go to static *and earlier*. The really good and successful games of that particular BT or thetan may have been before static!

As a result of these two commands, the BT (and its creator) will feel relief and the last quanta connecting you with the thetan behind the BT will finally blow.

Of all steps on this procedure, it will be on this one at the latest that the original BT “becomes” a thetan. The original BT, witness to all sorts of terrible incidents and dirtied up by foreign theta quanta, is now stripped down to a handful of simple and homogeneous quanta pertaining to a single owner and serving as a communication link between two thetans: you and him.

You are in touch with a live thetan “on the other side” of the BT, you are in touch with a being, and he will be huge. There will be mutual recognition of this circumstance, thankfulness and words of good-by - and then, when the last of his theta quanta has been dissolved, the line will disconnect.

You can't blow a thetan, you see. You can be in touch with him via a number of dimension points, by an interchange of attention, and you can stop being in touch with him. But you can't “blow” him.

General note: When your BT has blown and you still feel “soupy” around the head, the theta quanta which were disconnected from the BT by the auditing may still be there. The “original BT” has gone but the bits that were added to it during the pre-1 incidents didn't. Usually these bits (theta quanta) are in a state of disorientation and don't quite know where to go.

Some of them may even be your own. Because it is your own theta power which held the BT in place - in your age-long effort to keep it away!

Stray theta quanta are easy to deal with. Do this:

1. Locate them. Have your attention scan around like a radar beam and encompass them in your space. They feel like a loose cloud.
2. Give them the “Two Rights of a Thetan”. They apply to all theta, not only to thetans proper. Each theta quantum suffers when it is stuck somewhere. By its nature theta strives to be static.

So tell them: “You have the right to self-determinism. You have the right to leave a game.”

This has two obvious implications; add them, too: “You are free to do what you like. You may join your creator and dissolve into the static state. Or you may

help in a game of your choice.” Repeat these instructions while scanning your space until they cause no further change.

3. Most of them will have blown now. Allow them to blow inwards, too, i.e. towards you! Because your personal ones will come to you (that’s an inflow), whereas foreign ones will go elsewhere (that’s an outflow). Blocking this inflow may cause new masses!

Those who don’t blow must be stuck in some incident. Either it’s the original hoover/spin/energy-sphere incident, or it’s a later one. After all, once they were in existence as pre-fabs all sorts of people used them! One thetan might have lost them and the next one picked them up. You must account for that. The earliest incident of overwhelm is that of hoovering.

Therefore ask: “Hoovering incident?” and take them through the three steps of hoovering, spinning and storage.

No response to that, ask: “Stuck in some other incident?” Get all incidents later than the hoovering (complete with the postulates which might have been impressed on them) until none are left, then run the hoovering as the earliest.

This will clean up your space to full brightness.

(Note that the auditing procedure recommended here goes far beyond the original OT III method. It was developed by Bill Robertson in 1985 whilst researching “Excalibur”. Note as well that OT III can only be successfully done in combination with OT I and II and if based on the ability called “Clear”. The above is only meant to serve as a remedy for the reader.)

C. Excalibur

Occasionally - and in particular before OT III and after - one finds entities that don't respond to Inc.2 or Inc.1, at least not immediately. This is because either they are prepared as control entities (trained on their man) and won't give away their secrets on a direct approach, or because they were not created in context with Inc.2, Inc.1 or any incident within Xenu's game. They need a very individualized approach - the Excalibur procedure by Bill Robertson.

THE PROCEDURE

A. Short Form for weak and fairly "ego-less" entities, for undefined bits and lumps, interfering fields and screens, etc.

1. Face the entity with loving admiration and become aware of its particle structure.
2. Tell them: "You all have the Two Rights of a Thetan, namely the right to self-determinism and the right to leave a game."
3. "The game you were created for, is over. You have done a fantastic job. But now that it's over you may all go home."
4. "Each of you please return to your own moment of creation! You may rejoin your creator, dissolve into nothingness or help in some other game."
5. Normally you will find the entity lightening up at this point or even dissolving. The remaining ones you may ask: "With what postulate (for which job) were you created?"
6. Acknowledge their answers and do steps 2 through 4 until they have gone.
7. Should it hang up, you would have to repeat the postulates given by them, pay attention to the incidents washed up that way, and run them in the narrative style (beginning to end, beginning to end, etc.) until they are discharged. (See the chapter on Postulate Auditing in "A Handbook for Use".)
8. If all this doesn't work, use the Long Form.

B. Long Form for entities with a lot of "ego-power" or for the bits remaining after the application of the Short Form. Can as well be used for thetans in their capacity as players of specific games, to get them out of these games. (Not to be used for the GE as one doesn't want to dissolve it nor disconnect it from one. One wants the GE to function

optimally and make it take care of the body as it should. To do so, one cleans it up by auditing the engrams it dramatizes. Excalibur doesn't serve for this.)

1. Where are you?

(The entity may have an entirely different opinion on this than the auditor!)

2. What are you?

(Job, task, mission, purpose, role. Must read on the meter! Example: "I'm a flower pot.")

Result of step 2: correct definition of the *being* of the entity.

3. a) "As a flower pot, what are you trying to attain (in particular on me)?"

b) "As a flower pot, what are you trying to prevent (in particular on me)?"

(Repeat 3a and 3b alternately until no further answers come. No FIN on the meter needed. - "F/N" means "floating needle" and indicates a state of inner harmony.)

Result of 3: correct definition of the *doing* of the entity.

4. a) "As a flower pot, what have you actually attained (in particular on me)?"

b) "As a flower pot, what have you actually prevented (in particular on me)?"

(Repeat 4a and 4b alternately till no further answers come; no F/N on the meter needed. Get *real* events that you know have happened in your life, time, place and circumstances. You want to find out when and how this entity interfered with your life.)

Result of 4: correct definition of the *having* (products) of the entity.

5. "When have you been put on me?"

(Answer not really relevant for the entity but for the solo-auditor who usually has big realizations about his life at this point. For handling the entity further, no answer is needed here. Should one get a good answer it's worth finding out what in-between hosts the entity had before it got to the solo-auditor, and where it originated from.)

6. After gathering all these data one may have to re-formulate the answer given in 1. If the answer given in 1 had a weak read on the meter or if that answer doesn't seem to go well with the data received so far, ask again: "Now that we know all

that, what would be the correct wording for what you really are?" - Example: "A meat-eating plant." (Instead of a mere "flower pot".)

Result of 3 through 6: Relationship between entity and auditor has been cleared up; the entity has begun to trust the auditor and is well "in session". Only now one can - starting with the next question - begin to handle the actual case of the entity.

7. "How did you become that?" (For example "a meat-eating plant".)

(Repeatedly run through the incident in the narrative style until the incident is discharged and the point found when the entity or rather the actual thetan in the incident - decided and agreed to be what he is now, for example a "meat-eating plant". This step, as the first and only one so far, must F/N on the meter.)

8. No F/N at this point: the entity isn't fully cleaned up yet and is still connected with some masses. "Inc.2?" - "Inc. 1 ?" - "Earlier similar incidents where foreign masses or particles were stuck to you?" (Run narrative to F/N.)
9. F/N but no blow, i.e. the entity/thetan doesn't dissolve or leave. This is due to disorientation. No masses - but what now? It takes rehabilitating earlier games and purposes, particularly those the thetan was in full agreement with, when he was free and self-determined. Handle in the fashion of the "earlier universe" steps suggested in the Restimulation Remedy. (This step addresses the thetan "behind" the entity rather than the actual entity itself.)
10. Handle any stray theta quanta with steps 2 through 4 of the Short Form. This will F/N.

"HOLDERS"

At any point in the above sequence you may find the entity becoming unresponsive and unwilling to talk further. Usually it is kept from communicating by a senior entity, the "holder". Find (telepathically) the line to the holder and audit him on steps 1 through 10 above.

Rule: never cut an entity short and prematurely look for possible holders. This may lead to over-restimulation and too much charge as to audit anything. Run each entity as far as you can get with it, reducing as much of its charge as you can, and only ask for holders when there is no other way.

Once the top holder is found and blown, you may come down the line again and audit all lower entities in sequence. This will be easy now that the suppression from up top is gone.

RESISTIVENESS

Some entities or thetans are perceptible but entirely unresponsive. They don't answer back; they resist any of the above approaches. To "crack" them, the Power Processes (Pr Pr's) are suggested, in particular Pr Pr's 4, 5 and 6. They are a fairly tedious but reliable method to deal with resistiveness.

Each Pr Pr is audited repetitively on the sequence of commands given as long as there are answers or meter reads or (ideally) both. One process leads to the next; they don't have to F/N each. The main point is to find the central incident the entity or thetan is stuck in and identified with; this usually happens during Pr Pr 6. At this point one would change over to the narrative style. (This application of Pr Pr's doesn't entirely conform with that used on auditees "in the flesh".)

Pr Pr 4 (Source):

1. Tell me a source.
2. Tell me about it.
3. Tell me a no-source.
4. Tell me about it.

Pr Pr 5 (Conditions):

1. What is?
2. What isn't?

Pr Pr 6 (Existence):

1. Tell me an existing condition.

(A condition that exists right at this very split second.)

2. How have you handled it?

(In the past, particularly the very first time you encountered it. This question will eventually lead to the central GPM the entity/thetan is stuck in.)

D. Bibliography

As this book goes to the multi-lingual European community, all titles are listed in their original language edition so that the reader may inquire for translations into his specific language. All definitions of English words are taken from the Thomdike-Barnhart Advanced Dictionary, 1974.

1. L.Ron Hubbard, Technical Dictionary of Dianetics and Scientology, 1975.
2. L.Ron Hubbard, "Science of Survival", 1951.
3. Both quotes from the Australian magazine "Nexus", December/January 1993.
4. See "The Code of Honor" in the book "Scientology 0-8" by L.Ron Hubbard, 1970.
5. L.Ron Hubbard, "Scientology 8-8008".1953.
6. Paramhansa Yogananda, "Autobiography of a Yogi", 1977.
7. Rupert Sheldrake, "The Presence of the Past", 1989.
8. L.Ron Hubbard, "A History of Man", 1952.
9. Max Freedom Long, "The Secret Science behind Miracles", 1954.
10. Franz Bardon, "Frabato", 1979.
11. Dieter Ruggeberg, "Theosophie und Anthroposophie im Licht der Hemmetik", 1988.
12. Karl Freiherr von Reichenbach, "Der sensitive Mensch und sein Verhalten zum Ode", 1854.
13. David V. Tansley, "Radionics Interface with the Ether Fields", 1979.
14. Peter Tompkins / Christopher Bird, "The Secret Life of Plants", 1973.
15. L.Ron Hubbard, HCOB 15 May 1963, "The Time Track".
16. The German Journal "Implosion" Nr.13, 1959. The book referred to is "A lost Technology" by Henry Kjellson, Sweden, publication date unknown.
17. Ajit Mookerjee, "The Tantric Way", London 1977.
18. Quoted from Bruce Cathie, "The Energy Grid, Harmonic 695", 1990.
19. Nikola Tesla, "Colorado Spring Notes 1899-1900", 1976.
20. Albert Einstein, "Das Raum-, Ather- und Feldproblem der Physik", 1934; quoted from Dr. h Rolf Schaffranke (alias Rho Sigma), "Forschung in Fesseln", 1994.
21. L.Ron Hubbard, "Scientology 0-8", 1970.
22. Francis Hitching, "Atlas of World Mysteries", 1978.
23. Shankara, "Crest-Jewel of Discrimination", 1970.
24. Maharishi Mahesh Yogi, "The Science of Being and the Art of Living", 1966.
25. P. Cyrill and K. Krasinski, "Tibetische Medizinphilosophie", 1953.
26. Will Durant, "The Story of Civilization", volume 3 ("Cesar and Christ"), 1944, and volume 4 ("The Age of Faith"), 1950.
27. According to Bill Robertson, this is taken from Hubbard's Philadelphia Doctorate Course, 1952.
28. J.G. Bennett, "Gurdjieff, a very great Enigma", 1984.
29. W.Y. E-ans-Wentz, appendix to "The Tibetan Book of Dead", 1960.
30. Julien Tondriau, "Du yoga au fakirism", Brussels 1960.
31. L.Ron Hubbard, introduction to the novel "Battlefield Earth", 1982.
32. Stephen W. Hawking, "Black Holes and Baby Universes" (Essays), 1993.

33. Buckminster Fuller and Robert Marks, "The Dymaxion World of Buckminster Fuller", 1973.
34. Robert Charroux, "Histoire inconnue des hommes depuis cent mille ans", 1965.
35. Robert O. Becker, "Cross Currents", 1990.
36. L. Ron Hubbard, Lecture 33, "Philadelphia Doctorate Course", 1952.
37. Wilhelm Reich, "Contact with Space", 1957.
38. Erich von Daniken, "Strategie der Gottei", 1990.
39. Johannes von Buttlar, "Adams Planet", 1991.
40. The Tibetan Book of the Dead, see 29
41. Luigi Moraldi, "L'aldila dell'uomo", Milano 1985.
42. Raymond A. Moody, "Life after Life", 1975.
43. Leonard Bernstein, "The Unanswered Question", The Norton Lectures at Harvard, 1973.
44. Conroy Maddox, "Dali", 1983.
45. Heinz Pfeifer, "Bruder des Schattens", 1971.
46. Dieter Ruggeberg, "Geheimpolitik", 1990.
47. Des Griffin, "Descent into Slavery", 1980.
48. Des Griffin, "Fourth Reich of the Rich", 1979.
49. Gary Allan, "None Dare Call It Conspiracy", 1971.
50. Will Durant, "The Story of Civilization", volume I ("Our Oriental Heritage"), 1935.
51. Carroll Quigley, "Tragedy and Hope", 1966.
52. Alfons Rosenberg, "Durchbruch zur Zukunft", 1958.
53. Paolo Lionni/Lance Klass, "The Leipzig Connection", 1978.
54. Dr. Thomas Levy, MD, in "Extraordinary Science", Jan/Feb/Mar 1994. The "evidence" quoted in Levy's article (and in this book) is taken from "American Mercury Magazine", November 1959, p.134.
55. Walter Bowart, "Operation Mind Control", 1978.
56. G. Andrews, "ET among us", 1987.
57. For the use of microwaves to create calculated effects on human DNA and brain functions, see Symposium on "Microwave Resonance Therapy", Kiev, Ukrainian Republic, May 10th -13th, 1989.
58. O. Bergmann, "Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote uberwachen die Weltmeere", 1988.
59. Haarmann, "Geheime Wunderwaffen", Teil I-m, 1983-1985.
60. Michael Hesemann, "UFOs - die Kontakte", 1990.
61. Elian Lian, "Der Pandora Aspekt".
62. Louis Pauwels/Jaques Bergier, "Le Matin des Magiciens", 1962.
63. Dayton Miller, "The Ether Drift Experiment and the Determination of the absolute Motion of the Earth", 1933.
64. John Symonds, "The Great Beast", 1971.
65. A. Carmin, "Guru Hitler", 1985.
66. Lumir Bardon, "Erinnerungen an Franz Bardon", 1992.
67. Ravi Shankar, "My Music, my Life", 1968.
68. Franz Bardon, "Der Weg zum wahren Adepten", 1957.
69. Franz Bardon, "Die Praxis der magischen Evokation", 1957.
70. Franz Bardon, "Der Schlüssel zur wahren Quabalah", 1957.

71. L.Ron Hubbard, Tape 6810C01.
72. Jon Atack, "A Piece of Blue Sky", 1990.
73. Russell Miller, "Bare-faced Messiah", London 1987.
74. Ruth Minshull, "How to Choose Your People", 1972.
75. See "GUK Bomb" in 1.
76. Serge King, "Imagineering for Health", 1981.
77. Serge King, "Mastering Your Hidden Self. A Guide to the Huna Way", 1985.
78. TV documentation by British journalists Tessa Shaw and Christine Ward Pearce, POW TV, Channel 4, 1994.
79. The Australian magazine "Nexus", June/July 1994.
80. Lincoln, Baigent, Leigh, "The Holy Blood and the Holy Grail", 1982.